

THE ANCESTRY
OF
PHOEBE TILTON
1775-1847

WIFE OF CAPT. ABEL LUNT

OF

NEWBURYPORT
MASSACHUSETTS

BY

WALTER GOODWIN DAVIS

PORTLAND, MAINE
THE ANTHOENSEN PRESS

1947

THE ANCESTRY OF
PHOEBE TILTON

CONTENTS

	<i>Page</i>
I. TILTON, OF LYNN AND IPSWICH	1
II. CRAM, OF HAMPTON	43
III. JACOB, OF IPSWICH	49
IV. APPLETON, OF IPSWICH	59
V. BROWN, OF IPSWICH	79
VI. DUTCH, OF GLOUCESTER AND IPSWICH	85
VII. KIMBALL, OF IPSWICH	109
VIII. SCOTT, OF IPSWICH	115
IX. ROPER, OF HAMPTON AND IPSWICH	121
X. CROSS, OF IPSWICH	127
XI. JORDAN, OF IPSWICH	141
XII. CHENEY, OF NEWBURY	145
XIII. SAFFORD, OF IPSWICH AND NEWBURY	151
XIV. LOW, OF IPSWICH	171
XV. BAILEY, OF SALISBURY	177
XVI. EMERY, OF NEWBURY	183
XVII. HALE, OF NEWBURY	191
XVIII. KIRBY, OF LITTLE MUNDEN, CO. HERTFORD, ENGLAND	201
XIX. LOWELL, OF NEWBURY	205
XX. JAQUES, OF NEWBURY	225
XXI. KNIGHT, OF NEWBURY	233
XXII. SILVER, OF NEWBURY	241

INTRODUCTION

PHOEBE TILTON is the only one of my eight great-great-grandmothers who was not a country woman, the wife of a farmer, for Newburyport, her home, was an important seaport town in her day as its handsome colonial and federal architecture still testifies. Her husband, Capt. Abel Lunt, was killed when his ship was taken by the French off the African coast in 1806 and she was left with five little children to bring up when she was only thirty-two years old. Her long widowhood lasted forty-one years.

The Tilton family has had much genealogical attention. General William Stowell Tilton worked out his own ancestry and made some investigations in England. Frank W. Hine, an able genealogist, specialized on the New Hampshire family but was interested in all branches. Willis Page Tilton worked on the Massachusetts family, but his papers, preserved in the library of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society, demonstrate the seduction of the "noble English ancestry" school of research. Finally Francis Theodore Tilton began the publication of a genealogy* of the family in parts, but lack of financial support forced a conclusion after eight had been issued. For information about the Tiltons of Long Island and New Jersey I am indebted to this unfinished work.

All of the families included in this ancestry lived in Essex County, Massachusetts, probably the most thoroughly covered county genealogically in the United States. It is therefore to be expected that some of the families have already been the subject of published work of varying value. Chief among them are Kimball,† Cheney,‡ Emery,§ Hale,|| Appleton¶ and Lowell.**

* *History of the Tilton Family in America*, Francis Theodore Tilton, Clinton, N. J., 1928-1930, in 8 parts.

† *History of the Kimball Family*, Leonard Allison Morrison and Stephen Paschall Sharples, Boston, 1897.

‡ *The Cheney Genealogy*, Charles Henry Pope, Boston, 1897.

§ *Genealogical Records of Descendants of John and Anthony Emery*, Rufus Emery, Salem, 1890.

|| *Genealogy of Descendants of Thomas Hale*, Robert Safford Hale, ed. by George R. Howell, Albany, 1889.

¶ *Memorial of Samuel Appleton*, Isaac Appleton Jewett, Boston, 1860. *Memorials of the Cranes of Chilton*, William Sumner Appleton, Cambridge, 1868.

** *The Historic Genealogy of the Lovells of America*, Delmar R. Lowell, Rutland, Vt., 1899.

From all of these books I have obtained some information but to all of them I hope that I have been able to make sound corrections and valuable additions.

Miss Sybil Noyes has read the manuscript and has saved me from transposed digits and many other petty errors—and some not so petty.

WALTER GOODWIN DAVIS.

Portland, Maine

July 12, 1946

I

TILTON, OF LYNN AND IPSWICH

THE ANCESTRY OF PHOEBE TILTON

TILTON

Tilton is a parish in the county of Leicester, England, which was set down in Domesday Book as Tillintone and Tiletone but had become Tilton by 1163. *The Oxford Dictionary of English Place Names* gives its origin as "Tila's tun," the enclosure, homestead or village of an early Englishman named Tila. Far to the south, in Sussex, there is another Tilton, but seemingly the name was applied to a field or farm too small to merit inclusion in the general topographical dictionaries. Of late years, however, it has become known as the home of the great economist, John Maynard Keynes, who, when he was created a peer, chose as his style Lord Keynes of Tilton. While it is not impossible that the latter place gave its name to a family, it is much more probable that the surname Tilton owes its beginnings to the Leicestershire parish.

There is ample evidence that a family calling itself "de Tilton" lived in Tilton in the later years of the thirteenth century. On the Friday before the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin Mary, in 1297 (25 Edward I), John de Tylton, who had with him John Skeffington, William de Tylton, his brother, Ralph de Retford, chaplain, and others, shot and killed Simon Skeffington with an arrow in a field called Posebergh, half a league from Tylton and a league from Skeffington. Geoffrey Skeffington, Simon's brother, raised a hue and cry, followed John de Tylton who had fled to his own house in Tylton, "a capital messuage which stands between the house of Alexander de Tylton towards the west and the house of John Dyggeby toward the east," and eventually captured him. Before the county court John de Tylton pleaded that he was a clerk and a member of Holy Church, and, to make a long story short, eventually produced a pardon from the king for all offenses committed by him.*

* *Leicestershire Medieval Pedigrees*, George F. Farnham, F. S. A., Leicester, 1925, p. 129.

For several centuries the lordship of the manor of Tilton was held by the distinguished family of Digby as sub-tenants of the Earl of Warwick. Robert de Diggeby was returned as sub-tenant of William Beauchamp for half a knight's fee in Tilton in the aid granted in 1235/6 to Henry III for marrying his sister Isabel to the emperor, for which Robert was taxed one mark.* In 1622 Burton published his *History of Leicestershire* and included therein numerous pedigrees which were later used by Nichols in his monumental history of the county. Mr. Nichols, who was not a critical genealogist, printed a pedigree of Digby of Tilton which begins with Aelmer, the pre-conquest Saxon lord of Tilton, as set forth in Domesday Book, follows him with one "de Tilton" lord and then continues with several generations called "de Digby de Tilton." The "de Tilton" in this latter instance was, of course, merely Digby's address, not a surname. To explain the change of name from "de Tilton" to "de Digby," Nichols suggests that the Tiltons, having acquired the manor of Digby in Lincolnshire in or about 1256, adopted the latter place name, although they continued to live in Tilton, which is in itself highly improbable in the thirteenth century. These delightful conclusions, which presented to the seventeenth century Digbys an unbroken male descent from a "noble Saxon" of pre-conquest days, something which can be fully proven for only two or three English families, notably the Berkeleys, are totally without proof and are typical of the time in which they were advanced. The Digbys certainly were in Leicestershire long before their alleged purchase of the manor of Digby in county Lincoln, for in 1199 one Robert de Diggebi was summoned as a juror in a Leicestershire assize.† If in fact "de Tiltons" held lands in Tilton under the Beauchamps, as was probably the case, and these lands came into the hands of the Digbys, it is much more likely that it was by purchase or by marriage than by male descent.‡

* Book of Fees, I, p. 520.

† Curia Regis Roll 18, Michaelmas, 1 John (1199), membrane 18. Leyc.

‡ See the account of the parish of Tilton in *Leicestershire Medieval Pedigrees*, by George F. Farnham, F. S. A., a scientific genealogist, pp. 129-131. One American Tilton, not without judgment in New England genealogy, accepted without proof and without question the claim that the Digbys were paternally "de Tiltons," into which error no experienced English genealogist would have fallen, and appropriated the arms of the Digby family, having them engraved on his seal ring. There is no evidence as to when the Digbys of Tilton adopted their arms but to throw the ownership of these arms back to the shadowy "de Tiltons," from whom the Digbys may or may not have descended, and to claim a descent of four centuries from these particular "de Tiltons" for our seventeenth century emigrant ancestor, William Tilton, whose ancestry is totally unknown, is not only a breach of taste but evidence of complete ignorance of the several ways in which territorial surnames may originate. As a matter of fact, the commonest way to name a founding was

The most important family of Tilttons, numerically speaking, is found in Gloucestershire where they were probably settled in the fifteenth century if not earlier. When the parish registers begin in 1538 there were Tilttons in Great Badminton and in Netherleigh, the latter a hamlet in the parish of Westbury-on-Severn, and these two yeoman families were, in all probability, closely related. The Tilttons of Great Badminton sent a branch into the parish of Marshfield, also in Gloucestershire. During the sixteenth century these Tilttons were very prolific and, as they were fairly consistent will-makers and as the parish registers were well kept, it is possible to follow their history down to the period of the emigration of our ancestor. A study, which seems exhaustive, has been made of them,* resulting in the finding of two William Tilttons, one at Great Badminton and the other at Netherleigh, of the right age to be the emigrant to New England, but in the case of each there is conclusive evidence that he did not leave England but died there, the Great Badminton man in 1668 and the Netherleigh man in 1667.

Country families of all classes sent boys to London to seek their fortunes and there we find Tilttons in the sixteenth century and later. A Richard Tylton of the parish of St. Katherine Coleman was a liveryman in the Carpenters' Company in 1536 and a warden in 1544, 1546, 1547 and 1549. In his will of November 28, 1553, he mentions his wife Joan, and John and Thomas, sons of Thomas Tilton, their relationship to him not stated. A Henry Tilton was apprenticed to Richard in 1550, and on Richard's death he was turned over to another master and in the same year sent to the Compter, a prison, his offense not recorded in the Carpenters's records. A John Tylton, born about 1568 ("aged 50" in 1617/8), was made free of the Drapers' Company in 1595, after having been apprenticed to Nicholas Wheeler, and as a draper of the parish of A' hallowes, Honey Lane, married Sara Hobson in 1596 and had five daughters baptized in that parish. A Henry Tilton, haberdasher, of the parish of St. Lawrence Jewry, aged thirty, married Ann Hutchinson of St. Mildred's in the Poultry at St. Dunstan's, Stepney, Oct. 26, 1602.

Very thin lines of Tilttons are found in Wiltshire in the par-

to give him as a surname the name of the parish in which he was found, and during the many decades in which surnames were being formed and were in a fluid state any man leaving the parish of Tilton for a new home would very commonly have been called "de Tilton" or Tilton from the place of his origin, even though totally unrelated to the family which might be using the name of its manor as a surname.

* By Mr. Charles A. Bernan.

ishes of Trowbridge and Devizes in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, from one of which the Tilttons who were living in the Wiltshire parish of Little Somerford in the eighteenth century may have descended. They were small tradesmen—bakers and tanners.

There are also, before the period of the emigration, a few instances of the name in scattered counties—two marriages in co. Cambridge in 1621 and 1633, a lone will of a Christopher Tilton of Wainfleet, co. Lincoln, in 1613, a marriage in co. Huntington in 1610. None of these seem to have any connection with the emigrant family.

Although the surname Tilton is extremely rare, it crops up occasionally in the eastern part of Leicestershire near the parish of its origin. "In the reign of King Henry II (1154-1189) Sir John de Tilton gave lands at Billesdon and Kirkby Beler to the lepers of St. Lazarus of Jerusalem, which the king confirmed to the brethren of Burton Lazars."* In 1309 John de Tilton paid homage to the Archbishop for a messuage and two carucates of land at Keythorpe, held by knight's service, and in 1334 Margery, wife of John de Tilton, held at her death one-third of two carucates of land in dower, being the inheritance of Roger, son of Roger Beler of Keythorpe. In 1346 William de Tilton was assessed 2s. for a twentieth part of a knight's fee when an aid was granted for knighting Edward of Woodstock (the Black Prince).† There were several churchmen of the name—Richard de Tilton, curate of Ouston in 1236, Richard Tilton, sacristan of Lincoln cathedral in 1402, Robert Tylton, vicar of Hinkley in 1490, and Thomas Tilton, vicar of Redmile in 1562. In 1434 John Sapcote of Keton, co. Leicester, made his will in which he mentions William, John and Thomas Tylton and names William Tylton his executor. The family of Sapcote held lands at North Luffenham in the neighboring county of Rutland, and in that parish a family of Tilton was living from 1559 to 1576 and possibly earlier. In the records of the city of Leicester the name Tilton is found sporadically from 1321 to 1492.

When we reach the period in which the wills of all classes, not merely the nobility and gentry, are still preserved, there are a few Tilton testaments which are of interest to us. A Robert Tylton of Kibworthe, co. Leicester, made his will in 1538,

* *The History and Antiquities of the County of Leicester*, John Nichols, F. S. A., 1807, III: 462.

† *Idem*, III: 486.

naming his brother Thomas Tylton and Thomas's five children, his wife Alys and their children Richard, Thomas and John. The next in date is the will of William Tylton of Narborough, co. Leicester, husbandman, made in 1549, among the legatees being his wife Agnes, his sisters Alys and Agnes Tylton, John Tylton, Elizabeth Tylton, William Tylton and William's children. Another William Tylton of Narborough, husbandman, made a will on May 14, 1578, leaving property to his wife Alice, his sons Robert and Thomas and Thomas's children Mary and John. This Thomas is presumably the Thomas Tylton of Narborough whose will is dated March 26, 1594. He had a wife Elizabeth, an only son William and daughters Mary Cooke and Amie Tylton. William was under age and, if William Tylton, the testator of 1578, was his grandfather, he was born after that year. ~

What became of this William Tilton, the last of the Narborough line? He may be the William Tilton of Broughton Astley, co. Leicester, who was buried there on January 19, 1615/6, and on whose goods administration was granted to Elizabeth Tilton, his next-of-kin, on March 2, 1615/6. On the other hand, as he is of the proper age to be the emigrant and not fully accounted for, he will bear further investigation if the record sources permit it. The same may be said for William Tilton of Churchlawford, co. Warwick, who was licensed to marry Ursula Pycroft of Cleybrook, co. Leicester, in 1610, if, indeed, he is not identical with William of Narborough.

In any event Leicestershire and Warwickshire seem to offer the most logical home for the emigrant William Tilton. William settled in Lynn, and from the controversial interest which his family took in religion it is probable that Puritanism was the basis for his departure from England. One of the most prominent of the Lynn settlers, Mr. Edward Holyoke, who had a keen religious sense, was a Warwickshire man, having been of Tamworth in that county, and his wife was the daughter of a Leicestershire clergyman. Some of his Lynn neighbors, including the Tiltens, may have sailed with him or followed him to the New World. William's son, Peter Tilton, by a tradition which seems plausible, came over before his father and family with Rev. Ephraim Huet with whom he is found in Windsor, Connecticut. Parson Huet was from Wroxall, also in Warwickshire.

1. WILLIAM TILTON first appears upon New England records in the year 1643, at Lynn, where he had possibly settled several years before. Born about 1589 in England, he was a man of more than middle age when he emigrated with his two grown sons and his wife Susanna, who was with him in Lynn and who was the mother of three younger sons, two of whom were possibly born in England.

The records give little information about William Tilton. On March 16, 1643/4, he and Edward Tomlins took the inventory of the estate of Abraham Belknap of Lynn, Tilton signing the document with a mark, and on December 21, 1646, Edward Burcham, Francis Ingalles and William Tilton were the appraisers of the estate of another Lynn neighbor, Francis Lightfoot. In 1646 we find "William Tilton of Lynn freed from training, paying 6s. yearly, but to keep his arms fixed," and in June, 1647, he was entirely freed from training because of his age. Such action was customarily taken when a man reached the age of sixty, and therefore we may guess with good reason that 1589 was the year of his birth. John Deakin, James Axey, Edward Burchum and William Tilton took the inventory of the estate of Edmund Lewis of Lynn on March 12, 1650/1, and, as he again affixed his mark, it is probable that he could not write.

William Tilton died in the spring of 1653, leaving a will which is unfortunately missing from the probate records. It was proved in July, 1653, by Edward Burcham and John Hud (Hood) and on the same day Susanna Tilton, the widow, produced an inventory which had been taken on April 16, 1653, by Edward Burcham, Henry Collins and Francis Ingols. The estate was valued at £128: 4: 10. The house and land, the largest item, were worth £30, and other interesting entries were "his purse & aparill & cloth" valued at £7: 18: 0, "too bibles and a hammer" 9s., 6d., and "sword, muskett & bandeleres" £1: 10: 0.*

Susanna Tilton soon married Roger Shaw of Hampton, making with him a prenuptial contract by which Shaw agreed to make certain payments to her children when they came of age. On March 8, 1653/4, Roger and Susanna Shaw sold to Thomas Chadwell, Richard Rooten and John Hude the Lynn house and land "lately in the occupation of the lately deceased William Tilton and his by reason of purchase from John Wing, and by

* *The Probate Records of Essex County*, I: 155.

him left to Susanna, his wife, as sole executrix, and now in the hands of Roger Shaw aforesaid by way of contraction and marriage of the said executrix." The homestead is described as "two acres, more or less, the house now standeth upon adjoining upon the town common on the East, and West upon the lands of Richard Rooten, South upon the Sea, and North upon the lands of Francis Ingalls." There were also included three acres at Sagamore hill, four acres of salt marsh on the Saugus river and twelve acres of planting-ground.*

Susanna Shaw died in Hampton on January 28, 1654/5, and responsibility for her three sons fell to Roger Shaw, their stepfather. Shaw was a man of ability and character. He had settled in Cambridge about 1638 and served that town as selectman and town clerk before moving to Hampton in 1647. There he was also a selectman and represented the town in the General Court in 1651, 1652 and 1653. He died on May 29, 1661. His will, made August 25, 1660, was proved October 10, 1661. In it he gave to his "son Daniell Tilton five pounds" and directed his son Benjamin Shaw to "pay unto Daniell Tilton the sum of Twenty five pounds when hee comes to the aige of 21 yeares." In a codicil he relieves Benjamin of this duty and appoints his son Joseph Shaw "to pay Abraham and Daniell Tilton their portions according to Covenant when they shall Come of Age."†

Of William Tilton's four proven children, all sons, Peter was married and had his first child in 1642. It is highly probable that John Tilton, who was in Lynn with William, and who was married and had his first child in 1640, was Peter's brother by the whole blood rather than William's brother. John Tilton named his second son Peter. There is, however, no documentary proof of John Tilton's relationship to William Tilton.

Children, by a first wife:

2. i. JOHN, possibly born about 1615.
3. ii. PETER, possibly born about 1617.

By wife Susanna:

4. iii. SAMUEL, b. about 1636.
5. iv. ABRAHAM, b. about 1638.
6. v. DANIEL, b. about 1642.

* Essex Deeds, 6:

† *Probate Records of the Province of New Hampshire*, New Hampshire Historical Society, 1907, 1: 47.

2. JOHN² TILTON (?*William*¹) was probably born about 1615 in England, and was married about 1639 to Mary —, but whether in Old or New England is not known. His name appears in New England records slightly before that of his presumed father when in the Essex County court held on July 12, 1642, he sued Richard Sadler.* He and his wife and young family lived in Lynn, probably with his father as there is no record of his owning land, and there he and particularly his wife fell under the influence of Lady Moody, a woman of strong character, who dissented from the belief in infant baptism. She had settled in Lynn in 1640 and in 1641 it was said of her: "Lady Moody lives at Lynn, but is of Salem church. She is, good lady, almost undone by buying Master Humphrie's farm, Swampscot." Gov. Winthrop wrote "the Lady Moodye, a wise, and anciently religious woman, being taken with the error of denying baptism to infants, was dealt with by many of the elders and others, and admonished by the church of Salem, whereof she was a member; but persisting still, and to avoid further trouble, she removed to the Dutch." In the court of December 14, 1642, the Lady Deborah Moodie, Mrs. King and the wife of John Tilton were presented for holding that the baptism of infants is no ordinance of God,† and on February 28, 1642/3, the wife of John Tilton, jr., was in court for not believing in infant baptism and speaking contemptuously of it, Gerrard Spencer, a Lynn neighbor, being the witness against her.‡

Lady Moody and her followers, including the John Tiltons, decided to seek a freer religious atmosphere in another colony and left Lynn in 1643. The Tiltons went first to Scituate, where, under the leadership of Rev. Charles Chauncey, there was a large group who also had unorthodox ideas on the subject of baptism. In August of that year John Tilton's name appears on the list of all Scituate males "from xvi Yeares old to 60 Yeares" able to bear arms.§ They did not remain long in Plymouth Colony, however, but joined Lady Moody at Gravesend on Long Island in New Netherlands, where John Tilton was one of the English colony that purchased land from the Carnarsie

* *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County*, hereafter cited as *Records and Files*, I: 43.

† *History of Lynn*, Lewis and Newhall, 1865, p. 204.

‡ *Records and Files*, I: 52. There is no other evidence that there was a John Tilton, sr., in Lynn. The clerk in Salem, merely knowing that John was a son of "old Tilton" of Lynn, added the "jr." unnecessarily.

§ *Records of Plymouth Colony, 1633-1689*, Boston, 1857, p. 191.

Indians in 1645, 1650 and 1654. In 1646 he was granted plantation lot No. 18, and in 1665 he bought lot No. 19 and other lands from George Baxter. When the town of Gravesend was organized in 1646 he became town clerk, filling this office about twenty years, the still-existing records giving evidence of his education and ability.

When the Quakers first appeared in the Dutch colony in 1657, the Tiltons' belief in absolute freedom of worship again got them into difficulties. In 1658, in her husband's absence, Mary Tilton "harbored" a Quaker woman preacher, and John Tilton was fined £12 and costs for this offense.* Soon both Mary and John had joined the new sect. In 1661 Tilton was arrested, taken to New Amsterdam and sentenced to be banished from the colony, but, possibly through the great influence of Lady Moody with Gov. Stuyvesant, the sentence was not enforced. In September, 1662, he was fined "for permitting Quakers to quake at his house at Gravesend" and a month later he and his wife were summoned to New Amsterdam and ordered to leave the Dutch colony by the following November 20. "Goody Tilton was not so much condemned for assisting at conventicles as for having like a sorceress gone from door to door to lure and seduce the people yea even young girls to join the Quakers." Through some means, however, the Tiltons again escaped banishment while remaining Friends.

Possibly it was the ever-present possibility of exile that induced John Tilton and eleven associates, known as "John Tilton and Company," to buy from the Indians in 1664 and 1665 a great tract in central New Jersey, including all of what became Monmouth and parts of Ocean and Middlesex counties. After the English conquest of the Dutch colonies in 1664, Governor Nicholls confirmed these purchases by the grant known as the Monmouth Patent, on condition that one hundred New England and Long Island families were settled there within three years. Full liberty of conscience and worship was guaranteed. John Tilton remained in Gravesend, resigning as a Monmouth patentee in 1669, but two of his sons, John and Peter, moved to Monmouth and took over their father's interest there.

In Gravesend in the next two decades John Tilton's name appears in frequent but less interesting records of land trans-

* *History of King's County, Stiles, I: 178.*

actions and probate matters. Mary Tilton died there on May 23, 1683, and he followed her in 1688.

The will of John Tilton "of Gravesend, in the King's County uppon Long Island in Yorkshire" was made September 15, 1687, and ordered recorded in the court of April 3, 1688. To John Painter he left £10 and all of his clothes. To John Tilton, junior, the dwelling house. The residue of the estate was to be divided between his children John Tilton, Peter Tilton, Thomas Tilton, Sarah Painttor, Abigail Scott, Esther Spicer and Mary Boman. To his executors John Tilton and Samuel Spicer, and also to William Richardson, "a certain Peece of land lying and being in Gravesend . . . ffor a burrial place which Longe hath and att present is enclosed and paield round for that end & so used with a way out off the streets seeven foote broard to go into it . . . for them and their successors and all friends in ye everlasting Truth of ye Gospell as occasion serves forever to have and to hold and to make use off to burie their Dead Inn."*

Children:†

- i. JOHN, b. June 4, 1640, in Lynn; m. (1) at Oyster Bay Oct. 10, 1670, Mary Coates; m. (2) at Flushing May 12, 1674, Rebekkah Terry. He lived in Gravesend until about 1693 when he sold his remaining Long Island land for £295 and moved to Monmouth, New Jersey. Will, dated Nov. 23, 1700, and proved April 17, 1704. Nine children by his second wife.
- ii. PETER, b. Jan. 16, 1642, in Lynn; m. April 22, 1663, Rebecca Brazier; d. at Middletown, New Jersey, Dec. 15, 1699. They were living in Monmouth County, New Jersey, by 1669, in Shrewsbury township, moving to Middletown township by 1678. He was a member of the Provincial Assembly in 1681 and 1682, an assistant justice in 1683, a commissioner to end small causes in 1683 and a justice of the Court of Sessions from 1691 to 1699. His original land holdings in New Jersey totalled 1070 acres. Eleven children.
- iii. SARAH, b. May 4, 1644; m. John Painter of Gravesend.
- iv. ESTHER, b. May 21, 1647, at Gravesend; m. May 21, 1665, Samuel Spicer.
- v. ABIGAIL; m. (1) May 15, 1679, Ralph Warner; m. (2) William Scott.
- vi. THOMAS, b. March 1, 1652. He married and settled in Delaware.
- vii. MARY, b. June 1654; m. Henry Bowman.

3. PETER² TILTON (*William*¹) was born in England, possibly about 1617. While he may have come to New England with his father, there is no record of him in Lynn and there is a traditional account which states that he preceded his family and migrated with Rev. Ephraim Huet in 1639. Mr. Huet, who

* *King's County Records*, I: 108.

† Births from Quaker records.

had been a Puritan parson in Wroxall, co. Warwick, was settled as a colleague to Rev. John Warham in Windsor in the Connecticut country when he arrived in New England, and at Windsor we get our first trace of Peter Tilton.

On May 10, 1641, Peter Tilton married Elizabeth — at Windsor, and in that year he bought from Anthony Hawkins a small lot in the village on which he built a house. There he lived until 1650 when he bought the Buckland lot just north of the Sandy Hill road and built another house, presumably bigger and better. Aside from these few facts, and the births of his three children, nothing is known of Peter Tilton's life in Windsor.

In the spring of 1659, after several years of religious differences, a strongly conservative minority of the church at Hartford and a like-minded majority of the church at Wethersfield, under the leadership of Rev. John Russell, decided to seek a new home above Springfield, in the Massachusetts Bay Colony. Peter Tilton and John Hawks of Windsor joined this group in the foundation of the town of Hadley. All of the "withdrawers," as they were called, signed an agreement on April 18, 1659, at Goodman Ward's house at Hartford. In Hadley Peter Tilton speedily became one of the leading citizens. Strongly religious, he was one of the two original deacons of the new church, and, with apparent educational qualifications, he held the most important town offices. To lay out the land which the "withdrawers" had bought, two "town measurers" were appointed, one being Tilton, in 1660. He took the freeman's oath on March 26, 1661, and in that year he was elected the town's auditor and also town clerk which office he filled for thirty-two years or until 1693. He served the town as selectman in 1670, 1674, 1677, 1679 and 1687, and was elected "recorder of lands" in 1663.

In 1664, from the trustees under the will of Edward Hopkins, Esq., who had lived in Hartford but who had returned to England, Hadley received £308 toward the foundation of a Grammar School, which at that period was the name given to a school basing its instruction on Latin and possibly Greek. When the board of five trustees of the school was formed in 1669, Peter Tilton was one of the two Hadley men elected. Tilton eventually resigned from this board, probably feeling that the small community did not justify a classical school but did need more practical elementary education. By 1686 the

fortunes of the school had seriously declined and a local movement to devote the endowment to an English school was laid before the County Court of Springfield. Samuel Partridge of Hadley was the chief proponent of the change, and Peter Tilton, who was a justice of the court, was heartily in agreement with him. The Grammar School was upheld, however, and, it would seem, properly so. John Pyncheon, Esq., the chief-justice, said "Mr. Tilton, fully falling in with him, is as full and strong in all his notions as Mr. Partrigg himself . . . Mr. Tilton said it (the decision) would kindle such a flame as would not be quenched. But if to do right & secure the public welfare kindle a flame, the will of the Lord be done."

Peter Tilton's contributions to the judicial and legislative system of his town, county and colony were distinguished. In Hadley he was a commissioner to end small causes, or local justice. For Hampshire county he acted as treasurer for ten years, was a member of the Council of War during the struggle with the Indians in the years from 1675 to 1677 known as King Philip's war and by 1680 he was a justice of the Hampshire county court. He represented his town in the General Court of Massachusetts Bay in Boston in 1665, 1666, 1668 and 1670-1679. He was also a legislator in 1667 but representing the town of Chelmsford. Mr. Peter Golding of Hadley accused Tilton of packing a court in 1693 and was fined £5 for the slander. Tilton's judicial career culminated in his election in 1681 as an "assistant" of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, which position he held until the beginning of the administration of Sir Edmund Andros in 1686. The assistants to the Governor had originally executive, legislative and judicial powers and duties, but long before Peter Tilton's time their functions had become solely judicial and they acted as the final court of appeal in the colony. Having gone through the successive stages of "Mr." and "Esq." in the colonial social scale he now became "The Worshipful" Peter Tilton, which fulsome title was still a degree below "Honorable" which was sometimes granted him. The Court of Assistants met twice a year during Tilton's incumbency, and he must have been very much at home in the provincial capital of Boston and a familiar figure in its society.

The most interesting feature of Peter Tilton's history is by its very nature the most obscure. In 1660 General Whalley and General Goffe, two of the Puritan judges of the Commonwealth

who had sentenced King Charles I to death, sought refuge in New England on the eve of the restoration of King Charles II. Hunted throughout the colonies by British agents, they eventually found asylum in Hadley under the protection of Rev. John Russell, the parson, and Peter Tilton, the chief layman of the town. There they remained in concealment for the remainder of their lives, possibly fourteen to sixteen years. Mr. Russell never left Hadley during those years, and Peter Tilton, frequently in Boston, acted as the agent of the family and friends of the regicides in sending and receiving information and in obtaining the necessary funds for their support. The secret was perfectly kept although it must have been known to the Russell and Tilton families and even to some others in the village. So well was it kept, in fact, that when Governor Hutchinson visited Hadley to gather facts for his *History of Massachusetts*, published in 1764, the people had little of memory or tradition to give him. In later days they made up for this lack, and spectacular and dramatic stories of the two generals were told, particularly of the appearance of one of them, armed and ready to lead in the defense of the town when an alarm was sounded during King Philip's war. They are all apocryphal, however.*

Peter Tilton's first wife, Elizabeth, may have died before he left Windsor. His second wife, Mary —, died in Hadley April 16, 1689. She must have been a woman of intelligence, for one of his letters to her from Boston contains comments on colonial and international politics which are a compliment to her understanding. As his third wife he married on November 3, 1690, Abigail Parsons, widow of Deacon Benjamin Parsons of Springfield and previously widow of John Leonard. Tilton died at Hadley July 11, 1696, and his widow survived until November 23, 1711.

Tilton made his will on April 24, 1694, and it was proved September 16, 1696. To his wife he left one third of his lands and housing in Hadley or elsewhere for life, and, if she chose to live in Hadley, she was to have the use of the west end of his house, both lower and upper rooms, also £10 and the things that she brought to their marriage. To his daughter Mary Eastman, to whom he had already given a full portion, 20s., and to her two sons Peter Eastman and Joseph Eastman 10s. apiece. To his son Peter Tilton, his house and barn, lands and

* *History of Hadley*, Silvester Judd, 2nd edition, 1905.

movables in Hadley or elsewhere, except what was given to his wife, and he shall not have power to sell the house and lands without the consent in writing of the executors. "Also my fatherly advice and charge is that he does not remove his habitation or dispose of himself in marriage without the advice of my executors." Also to his son Peter "the bed I now lye on with all the furniture thereto belonging." Executors: loving friends Capt. Aaron Cooke Esqr. and Samuel Partrigg.

The estate was surprisingly small, considering the man's prominence, and this is possibly to his credit. The reputation of more than one of his prominent contemporaries is marred by the use made of governmental position to obtain great land grants for no acknowledged return. The entire estate was valued at £300, the homestead being entered at £60. Except for a silver cup, it contained no articles of luxury. Of books, however, there were many. "Book," and "books," without titles, are listed nine times. In addition there are bibles, psalm books, annotations, concordances, law books, Fox's *Book of Martyrs*, Zealand's Index, *The Resolves and Prophecy of Daniel*, and works by Cotton, Clark, Dalton, Tocker and others. This "Inventory of ye Estate of ye Worship^{ll} Petr Tilton Esqr who dyed 11 July 1696" was taken by Lieut. Joseph Kellogg and Lieut. Timothy Nash on July 16, 1696.*

Children, by first wife, born in Windsor:

- i. ELIZABETH, bapt. June 19, 1642; d. in 1655.
- ii. MARY, bapt. Feb. 18, 1643/4; m. (1) Joseph Eastman of Suffield who d. in April, 1692; m. (2) Feb. 17, 1693, James Guernsey.
- iii. PETER, bapt. Dec. 5, 1647. He was, according to tradition, feeble-minded and constantly guarded, and must have been a source of great sadness and anxiety to his father. He was still living in 1707 when he would have been sixty years old.

4. SAMUEL² TILTON (*William*¹), the eldest son of his father by his wife Susanna, was possibly born in England. Various estimates of his age indicate his birth year as between 1637 and 1640, and, as we have seen, the exact time of the family's emigration is not known. He was a boy in his teens when his father died, and, upon his mother's marriage to Roger Shaw, he went with them to Shaw's home in Hampton.

On April 6, 1660, Roger Shaw, his step-father, deeded to Samuel Tilton "ye son of Susana, my late wife, now deceased," fifteen acres of upland and five acres of marsh in Hampton.

* Hampshire Probate, Box 148, No. 18.

Shaw died in 1661, and on June 12 of that year Joseph Shaw, his father's executor, received from Samuel Tilton an acknowledgement that the £30 which Roger and Susanna Shaw had agreed should fall to him when he reached the age of twenty-one had been fully paid to his satisfaction. Tilton conveyed the land covered by Shaw's deed to John Clifford of Hampton on October 30, 1661, having bought, three weeks before, twenty acres of upland from Robert Tuck, vintner. He made several other small purchases of land in Hampton between 1662 and 1670. In these deeds he is called a carpenter.

Samuel Tilton married Hannah Moulton in Hampton on December 17, 1662. About 1673 they and a group of their Hampton neighbors moved to the island of Martha's Vineyard where the Tiltons settled on twenty-two acres of land granted to him by the town of Tisbury on February 5, 1674. Two years later, in partnership with Isaac Chase and Jacob Perkins, both from Hampton, he bought one-sixth of Homes Hole neck. Tilton sold his Tisbury land before 1678 and went to live in Chilmark, another Vineyard town, where by various purchases he acquired a large tract in the Kephigon district, bordering on the Sound and extending to the middle line. Here he lived an uneventful life, without known public service, for sixty years.*

Hannah Tilton died at Chilmark on April 11, 1720, and Samuel Tilton died there on November 29, 1731, "in the 94th year of his age." Parson Homes wrote his character: "He was a man of good understanding, was an antipedobaptist in his judgment, but pious and regular in his conversation. He was against swearin and usery." To the good parson swearing did not mean profanity but the taking of legal oaths, and usury was not a demand for unduly high interest but for any interest whatsoever. Obviously Samuel Tilton shared the religious interests and prejudices of his elder brother John.

Samuel Tilton of Chilmark, Duke's County, made his will June 5, 1718, and it was proved March 7, 1732. To his three sons William, John and Josiah Tilton, all of Chilmark, and their heirs and assigns, he left all his lands, buildings and "appurtenances to the same any wise belonging" and all his carpenter's and other tools, after the death of his wife Hannah, to be equally divided between them. To his three daughters Hannah Wing, Mary Allen and Rachel Lumbert, all of his stock, movables and household goods to be equally divided be-

* *History of Martha's Vineyard*, Banks, II: 29-39.

tween them, except one great iron kettle which he gave to his granddaughter Ann Lumbert. Executors: sons William and John Tilton. Witnesses: Josiah Torrey, Sarah Torrey, Edward Milton.*

When Samuel Tilton, his family and Hampton friends came to Martha's Vineyard, a young girl, Mary Tilton, was with them. Within two years she married Isaac Chase, a young widower of the Hampton group, bore him twelve children between 1677 and 1703, and died in 1746, aged eighty-eight years, according to the inscription on her gravestone. The parentage of Mary Tilton is not proven. Obviously she was closely related to the Tiltons of Hampton. To argue that she was a daughter of William and Susanna Tilton we must set the year of her birth back at least to the winter of 1652-1653 when William Tilton died, and by so doing say that her last child was born when she was fifty, which is improbable. Gravestones are notoriously inaccurate, but they are more apt to exaggerate the age of a very old person than to underestimate it, and Mary's stone would indicate that she was born in 1658. All five of William Tilton's sons had daughters named Mary who lived to grow up and marry during the lifetime of Mary (Tilton) Chase. Of the three boys who were in Hampton with their mother, Samuel, who would have been twenty in 1658, is the most logical candidate for her father, particularly as she went with him from Hampton to the Vineyard. It is most probable that she was his illegitimate daughter, acknowledged and brought up by him and the woman of character whom he married, after the death of her natural mother.†

Probable illegitimate child:

- i. MARY, b. about 1658; m. at Tisbury, Martha's Vineyard Oct. 5, 1675, Lieut. Isaac Chase, who d. May 19, 1727, aged about 80; she d., his widow, June 14, 1746, aged 88. Isaac Chase, a blacksmith, had come to Martha's Vineyard from Hampton with Samuel Tilton about two years before this marriage. His will, Feb. 12, 1721/2—July 7, 1727, names his friends William and Josiah Tilton overseers.‡

Children:

- ii. HANNAH, b. Sept. 15, 1663, at Hampton; probably m. Nathaniel Wing. She was Hannah Wing in 1718.

* Duke's County Probate, 2: 69.

† For descendants of Samuel Tilton on Martha's Vineyard, see the genealogical volume of the *History of Martha's Vineyard*, by Col. Charles E. Banks.

‡ Duke's County Probate, 2: 21.

- iii. WILLIAM, b. Nov. 11, 1668, at Hampton; m. March 1696, at Martha's Vineyard, Abiah Mayhew, who d. June, 1739. His will April 11-Aug. 11, 1745, mentions his son Beriah Tilton and the six children of his daughter Jane Hunt, late of Chilmark, deceased.
- iv. JOHN, b. Oct. 23, 1670, at Hampton; m. Sarah Mayhew. His will, March 6-June 25, 1759, mentions his five sons and his daughter Sarah Skiffe, and names his son Thomas his executor.
- v. JOSIAH, b. at Chilmark about 1677; m. Bathsheba Mayhew. His will, Feb. 11, 1750-June 30, 1752, names his wife Bathsheba, his sons Salathiel, Micah and Josiah, his daughters Abiah Mayhew and Bathsheba Skiffe.
- vi. MARY, b. at Chilmark about 1680; m. Samuel Allen of Chilmark.
- vii. RACHEL, b. at Chilmark about 1683; m. Oct. 19, 1707, Jonathan Lumbert of Tisbury.

5. ABRAHAM² TILTON (*William*¹), like his brother Samuel, was possibly born in England before the family's emigration, or very soon after his parents' arrival in Lynn. In 1714 his age was given as seventy-two, which indicates 1642 as the year of his birth, while at his death in 1728 he was stated to be ninety years of age in which case he was born in 1638. His age was quite probably exaggerated at the end, and a conservative guess of 1640 as the correct year will not be far wrong.

About six months after his father's death his mother apprenticed the boy to a Lynn neighbor, John Hood, a weaver by trade, and the indenture, setting forth the duties of master and servant, survives.

This indenture made ye fifth day of December in year 1653 between Abraham Tilton ye sonne of ye Widdow Tilton of Lynn in New England and County of Essex on ye one part and John Hud of ye same town and County, Weaver Witnesseth that Abraham Tilton aforesaid hath, with the consent of his friends put himself apprentice to John Hud Weaver in ye town and County aforesaid after the manner of an apprentice with him to dwell from ye day and date hereof ye full time and term of eight years and during ye said time shall ye said Abraham his said Master faithfully shall serve, his secrets shall keep, his lawful commands everywhere gladly shall Doe, taverns shall not frequent, matrimony hee shall not contract, Damage to his said Master hee shall not doe nor suffer others, hee shall not absent himselfe from ye house of his said Master by day nor by night unlawfully, but everywhere behave himselfe as a faithful servant ought to do. And ye said John Hud to his said servant shall teache and inform, or cause to be taught and informed in ye art craft misterie and occupation of a Weaver as much as thereto belongeth or anywise apperteineth to the uttermost skill that John Hud himselfe hath, finding to his said Servant meat, drink, hoserie, shoes Woolen linnen Clothes Washing and ordering, and att ye end of his time to give him dubble sutes of apparel and also to spare his servant six weeks to learn to write between Yuletide and Januarie the servants friends paying for his writing and ye said John Hud hath liberty in case hee goe to Old England to give his servant his time; the said Abraham is to have double now at his coming to service.

In Witness Whereof Wee Jno Hud and Abraham Tilton hath interchangably sett hands and seales ye day and year above written

His Mark
JOHN HUD

Signed and delivered
in ye Presence
of us Edward Burchum
Ginkin Davis
Garret Spencer*

John Hood did in fact return to old England not long after he made the contract with young Abraham, and, deciding to remain there, wrote to his wife Elizabeth Hood some time in 1655 to wind up his affairs in Lynn and join him. Hood directed her "to deliver his prentice Abraham Tilton to his mother," but as the boy's mother had died in January, 1654/5, that was impossible. Roger Shaw, who was a very conscientious step-father, came down from Hampton and asked that the boy be delivered to him, but Elizabeth Hood, "taking the advice of the Elders at Lynn," had already begun negotiations with "Peter Tilton living in Connetticott" by which she was to have 30s. "in lieu of wt charges I had been att hee being young & but a little Wth us." One Nathaniel, whose surname is illegible, went with Shaw to Goodwife Hood and testified that he had "some speeche with Abraham Tilton before hee was sent away to Conecticott" and that "hee was altogether unwilling to goe to his brother but rather chose to goe to his father Goodman Shaw." The boy went to his brother Peter, nevertheless, but Roger Shaw applied to the County Court at Hampton and obtained an order that Abraham should be placed in his care and served it on goodwife Hood. This had the desired effect, for in November, 1655, after explaining her position in detail she revoked the contract made with Peter Tilton "yielding & submitting to Wt the Court hath granted to his father in law† Rodger Shaw." So Abraham's stay in Connecticut was short and the rest of his boyhood was spent with his brothers Samuel and Daniel in the Shaw household in Hampton.‡ When Roger Shaw died in 1661 he mentioned his obligation to Abraham in the codicil to his will.

Abraham Tilton and Mary Cram were married in Hampton on January 25, 1665/6. Soon afterward they went to live at Sturgeon Creek in the Maine town of Kittery where Tilton

* Norfolk Records; Vol. 1, folio 57, in which Abraham's signature to the indenture does not appear.

† Step-father.

‡ Norfolk Records, I, folio 57.

practiced his trades of housewright and millwright. Peter Wit-
tum, jr., in a deposition stated that Abraham Conley of Stur-
geon Creek had sold standing timber suitable for building pur-
poses to Tilton and that "Abra: Tilton did then dwell in Abra:
Conlys house & wrought upon the aforesd Tymber. This was in
the yeare 67: or 1668."* On October 31, 1668, he bought from
Nathan Lord forty acres of upland and the meadow belonging
thereto in Kittery.† Abraham Tilton, resident at Sturgeon's
Creek, gave a receipt to his step-brother, Joseph Shaw of
Hampton, on May 13, 1669, for £20, half of which was due
to him by the will of his father, William Tilton of Lynn, and
half by the contract of marriage between Roger Shaw and his
mother.‡

In 1670 the Tilttons had moved to Wells where on October
20, 1671, he, called "of Wells, house carpenter," bought from
Francis Backhouse a farm of one hundred and fifty acres with
buildings and marsh lands on the north-east side of the Ogun-
quit river.§ He sold the Lord farm in Kittery to Myles Thomp-
son and Israel Hodgsdon in March, 1671/2, and what remained
of the Conley timber to William Gowen *alias* Smyth on April 3,
1672. On the following day he took an apprentice, John Lov-
erell, son of Esther Loverell, for a term of twelve years.|| In a
deposition made in 1714, Tilton, then of Ipswich, stated that
about forty years previously (1674) he had hired a farm in
the eastern part of Wells from Mr. Samuel Wheelwright for a
term of two years, had built a house and sawmill and sur-
rendered the same to Wheelwright when the lease expired.¶

Mary (Cram) Tilton released her dower in the 1671/2 deed
to Thompson and Hodgsdon, but she must have died within a
few years, leaving her husband with three small boys. Tilton's
second wife, Deliverance, was presumably a Wells girl, and
there can be little doubt but that she was Deliverance Little-
field, daughter of Francis Littlefield, sr., Tilton's neighbor, for
whom he witnessed documents and who was later in Ipswich
with the Tilttons.

Tilton served on a York trial jury in 1674 and on the grand
jury in 1675. In an account headed "Common Arrers ffor Soul-
diers Charges of the Late warre Granted and allowed by the

* *York Deeds*, III: 65.

† *York Deeds*, II: 141.

‡ *Norfolk Records*, II, folio 515.

§ *York Deeds*, II: 130.

|| *York Deeds*, II: 141, 139; III: 64.

¶ *York Deeds*, VIII: 247.

Committee of Militia of Wells from the first Beginning of the Late Indian warre unto the first September 1677," Abraham Tilton is entered for £7 in one place and for £4: 7: 8 in another. Whether these sums were due for service or supplies is not known.*

Wells was an exposed outpost during King Philip's war and the danger of Indian attack may have induced Tilton to move his family to the safety of Ipswich, where he remained for the rest of his life. He was in that town on March 30, 1676, when he appraised some work done for Dr. Dane by Freegrace Norton, and there he took the Oath of Allegiance in 1678. He must have occupied a house once owned by William Averill, for in Averill's right Tilton was a town commoner on February 18, 1678/9. On May 11, 1681, he took the Freeman's Oath. He retained his Wells property until after 1678 when the town granted him ten acres, but soon thereafter he deeded his house and one hundred and fifty acres in Wells to James Littlefield, his wife's presumptive brother, who in turn sold to his father, Francis Littlefield, on March 20, 1682.†

Before May 3, 1681, when Mr. Richard Hubbard died, Abraham Tilton bought from him and paid £80 for a house and twelve acres of land in that part of Ipswich which later became Hamilton, but did not receive a deed. Mrs. Sarah Ward, administratrix of the estate of her former husband Mr. Hubbard, remedied this on April 12, 1683. The land was on the country road to Boston and also on a highway that led over the river to Ipswich common.‡ In 1690, for £140, he bought forty-four acres more of the Hubbard farm from Sarah (Hubbard) Cotton, wife of Rev. John Cotton of Yarmouth,§ and in 1700 he made a further purchase of thirty-seven acres and a house from Mr. John Hubbard for £90.|| His other purchases were small lots of meadow and marsh.

In Ipswich Abraham Tilton continued to practice his trade as a housewright and seems to have prospered. In 1698 he was one of a committee to consider the building of a new meeting-house in Ipswich, and with his son Abraham he made proposals for the construction of the building, but was underbid by Abraham Perkins, with whom, however, the Tiltons were later asso-

* *Maine Historical Society, Documentary History*, VI: 194.

† *York Deeds*, V: 89.

‡ *Essex Deeds*, 15: 96.

§ *Essex Deeds*, 16: 18.

|| *Essex Deeds*, 15: 96.

ciated in the work. When the meeting-house was completed in 1700 the committee appointed for that purpose assigned to Mr. Abraham Tilton, sr., and Abraham Tilton, jr., the first pew on the east of the pulpit for their wives and families. Mr. Tilton, sr., was appointed a place on the first of the short seats, near the pulpit, among the most elderly men.

Tilton began distributing his property to his sons by deed in 1702 when he gave to his son Samuel, "for the encouragement of my said son to duty and obedience to me and his mother," forty-three acres of the Hubbard farm, and to his son Isaac, "after my natural life and the life of my wife Deliverance," thirty acres on which stood the family homestead, barns and orchard.* In 1718 he gave his common rights in Ipswich to Isaac and also twelve acres adjoining the homestead "which is the whole of land remaining to me undisposed of."† Abraham Tilton, jr., released all claims on his father's property as eldest son or otherwise on March 10, 1708/9.‡

In 1714 Abraham Tilton was dismissed from the first church in Ipswich and with his neighbors in Ipswich Hamlet formed the third church, subscribing to the covenant October 12, 1714.

In the cemetery at Ipswich Hamlet, now Hamilton, Abraham Tilton's gravestone still stands, inscribed "Here lyeth ye body of Abraham Tilton, who died March ye 28, 1728, 90 years of age," and the burial of "old Mr. Tilton" was entered in Mr. Whipple's account book. He was often, although not consistently, given the title of respect, "Mr.," in his Ipswich days.

Deliverance Tilton survived until some time between November 9, 1730, when she made her will, and July 2, 1733, when it was proved. In the Whipple account book is an entry of the burial of "Old Master Tilton" in May, 1732. Possibly Mr. Whipple intended to write "Mistress" instead of "Master," for certainly no old Master Tilton died in Ipswich at that time. By her will Deliverance Tilton left to her three sons Abraham, Samuel and Isaac Tilton, and her two sons-in-law Tristram Brown and Thomas Durgye, 5s. apiece. To the three sons of her son-in-law Robert Bell, deceased, 5s. apiece. To her daughter Sarah Martin, £10 in Province bills "to her Sole use & improvement: & Exclusive of her husband." Her daughter Mary Brown having already had more than £10, she is left out of

* Essex Deeds, 15: 93, 94.

† Essex Deeds, 35: 58.

‡ Essex Deeds, 53: 163.

the distribution of money. To the children of her daughter Rebecca Duges, which she had by her former husband John Lamb, deceased, £10. To John and Ebenezer Philmore and Ruth Kenicum, children of her daughter Abigail Bell, deceased, £10. Her remaining movable estate to be divided into four parts and given to her daughter Sarah Martin (with the same exclusion of her husband), her daughter Mary Brown, the children of her daughter Rebecca by John Lamb and the three children of her daughter Abigail Bell, deceased, but Mary Brown's share shall be 30s. less than the others. Executors: her sons Samuel and Isaac Tilton. Witnesses: Samuel Wigglesworth, Martha Wigglesworth.*

Children, by first wife:

7. i. ABRAHAM.

- ii. ISAAC. He was a young man in his twenties, living in the house of William and Sarah Baker in Ipswich in 1692, when he set out for active service against the Indians at the fort at Pemaquid, having the rank of sergeant. When his military duties were over, early in 1693/4, he decided to remain in Pemaquid, writing to William Baker "the Captain and I have made a bargain for mee with Jonadab Wait To stay Till the Last of october next to burn Lyme for him and have gotten a good bargain: then you may expect us home." He never returned, however, for before the time set "Sergeant Isaac Tilton & Peter Dill going off with a small birchen Canno into Pemmaquid-Sound were by a sudden Gust of wind & snow overwhelmed & both drowned." †

Abraham Tilton, jr., was appointed administrator of the estate on April 22, 1695. He entered an inventory listing clothing and a few personal articles, including a pair of shoe buckles and a gold ring, debts due the estate, including wages due from Capt. March of £12, and desperate debts, in a total of £68:13:6. Debts due from the estate were £8:6:9, including small sums to Capt. March, Sergt. Hugh March and Corp. Busell.

The court held that Tilton had made a nuncupative will. William and Sarah Baker testified as follows: "We being in bed together in ye year. 1692 Isaach Tilton having lived at Our house then he going to pemaquid took his Leave of us about 10 or 11 of ye clock in ye night: & said if the providence of God Order yt I returne noe more pay yourself what I owe you & deliver the Rest of my Estate to my Bro. Abraham Tilton." Thomas Wait testified that he had told Isaac "it was good all those that went out as soulders that had any estate to make there will be fore they went out to prevent trubble," and his wife Mary Wait added that Isaac said "that his brother Abraham should have what he leafe for he was all the own brother that he had in the world that he knows of." The most interesting paper on file is, however, a letter which Isaac wrote to his friend William Baker:

* Essex Probate, 319:393.

† Diary of Rev. John Pike.

"From pemaquid 20 January 1693

Kind and Loueing Friend Mr Baker, my Loue Remembred unto you and wife & all your family Hoping That you are all in Good health as I am at this present writing blessed be god For the same. Sir—I Received your^{rs} Bearing Date the 8 January being one this Instent: wherin I understood That you^r Family was in good health blessed bee the Lord for That marcy; and also the Tender of you^r Kindness was therin expressed in this that if I would send my Debenture to you you would get my wages. I was in hopes that I should not have The occasion To have given you The Trouble because I did Thinke to have had my wages brought mee by the Captain in money but he brought mee nothing but a Debenture to the Constable of Ipswich for itt. Therefor I have sent itt you within This Inclosed by John Chapman (illegible word) the same Therin containing of Twenty & eight pounds seventeen shillings & six vence which I would pray you to gitt as soon as you can and when you have gotten itt I would have you to pay one pound, 11 shillings & sixpence to Francis haynes of Newbury and take his Receipt for The same; & about a month from this Time I would pray you to send abousd haynes for a gun that hee hath to fitt up for mee and Then pay him the abousd Thirty one shillings & six pence. Pray keep the gun in Killter and all above Twenty pound when that is payed I would have you giue mee Credett upon you^r Book and also what money I Left in yo^r hands I would have you give mee Credet one yo^r Book and Let it Discharg what itt will of my Debt in yo^r Book. Then the other Twenty pound I would have you Lay up for mee only use it if you need; but Sitt itt Done in you^r book for all men are mortaille that so ther may be noe Desturbance between us: Ther is six shillings you must Received of John Chapman. I did Intend to bee at home befor This Letter but the Captain & I have made a bargin for mee with Jonadab Wait To stay Till the Last of october next to burn Lyme for him and have gotten a good bargin; then you may exspect us home: pray Let me hear from you att all opprotunetyes you may have and the Latterend of febr'y by maradelhead boats for wee exspect them hear then certain: I have Recd you^r Tokens which I give you many Thankes for: no more at p^resent only I Remain you^r Loveing Friend Isa Tilton. Pray give my Respects to Uncle & ant Stacy & present my services To Mis Margaret Woodwell & tell her that I did not think she would prove so unkind to me as to have any plow joger (*sic*) when she promised to have mee. Friend Baker I would Pray you to Take so much Care about my Cloathing as to aer them at Times: as concerning my horse & sheep you have Them in you^r Hands and Keep them as you have: If you shall hear that I should doe worsor than well satisfied you^r selfe with what you have of mine & pay all the Rest to my Brother Abraham Tilton: no more

I remain You^r Friend To Comand Isaac Tilton Let mee hear from you if you have any opprotunety—Yor^{rs} To Command
Is^a Tilton."

"Mis Margaret Woodwell" was a daughter of Matthew and Mary Woodwell of Salem and she married her "plow-joger," John Robinson, on June 18, 1694. "Uncle and ant Stacy" cannot have been Isaac's real uncle and aunt. They were probably a

childless couple, Capt. Simon and Sarah (Wallis) Stacy of Ipswich, whose niece, Elizabeth Stacy, had married Margaret Woodwell's brother John. Margaret Woodwell, and Isaac Tilton while courting her, may possibly have called the Stacys uncle and aunt, by courtesy.*

- iii. JACOB. On Dec. 25, 1689, the marshal of the county of Essex was ordered to apprehend Jacob Tilton of Ipswich to answer the complaint of Samuel Dodge of Ipswich who charged Tilton with stealing a horse out of his stable on the third of February last past, in the night. Daniel Denison, jr., found Jacob in Lynn and served the writ on the day on which it was issued. Denison was with his prisoner at the house of Theophilus Bagley in Lynn when Jacob made his escape, through the aid of Isaac Ringe of Ipswich. Nothing more is heard of Jacob Tilton, but his identity is made certain by the fact that, when Isaac Ringe was summoned on Jan. 20, 1689/90, to answer for his offense, Abraham Tilton, jr., was his surety.

By second wife:

- iv. SARAH; m. ——— Martin. From her mother's will it is apparent that her parents did not approve of her husband.
- v. ABIGAIL, b. in Ipswich April 1, 1679; m. (1) June 19, 1701, John Fillmore, sailor; m. (2) Nov. 7, 1717, Robert Bell; d. in Norwich, Conn., Nov. 13, 1727.
- vi. SAMUEL, b. in Ipswich April 14, 168-; bapt. in Wenham in 1680.
- vii. EBENEZER (twin), bapt. in Wenham in 1682; d. young.
- viii. MERCY (twin), bapt. in Wenham in 1682; d. young.
- ix. MARY, b. in Ipswich Aug. 8, 1683; m. Tristram Brown.
- x. JOSEPH (twin), bapt. at Wenham in 1685; d. young.
- xi. BENJAMIN (twin), bapt. at Wenham in 1685; d. young.
- xii. DANIEL, bapt. at Wenham in 1687/8; d. young.
- xiii. REBECCA, b. in Ipswich March 8, 1692/3; m. (1) int. April 6, 1717, John Lamb; m. (2) Thomas Durgye.
- iv. ISAAC, b. in Ipswich May 2, 1695.

6. ENSIGN DANIEL² TILTON (*William*¹), his parents' youngest child, was born about 1642, presumably in Lynn. After his father's death he went with his mother to Hampton and was brought up in the family of his step-father Roger Shaw. Shaw left "his son Daniel Tilton" £5 and £25 in two separate parts of his will but in a codicil seemingly cancelled the £25 and directed his son Joseph Shaw to pay Daniel his portion, presumably £10, when Daniel came of age. After Roger Shaw's death Daniel lived with his step-brother, Joseph Shaw, who on April 8, 1662, was ordered by the court at Salisbury to "allow unto Daniel Tilton forty shillings in consideration of wt services he hath done for him since he was 14 years old, unto the day." At the same session the court approved Daniel's choice of his brother Samuel Tilton as his guardian, and ordered Samuel to bind over sufficient land to secure Daniel's portion.† On

* Essex Probate, No. 27658.

† *Records and Files*, etc., II: 383.

April 13, 1663, Samuel Tilton, as guardian, acknowledged the receipt of £10 from Joseph Shaw on Daniel's account.*

Daniel Tilton learned the blacksmith's trade, and in 1667 he was allowed "to sitt down as a smith" in Hampton, promising to do the town's work "upon as good terms as any other man that doth use that trade in these parts," in return for which the town made him a grant of four acres on Hampton hill in 1669.

On December 23, 1669, Daniel Tilton and Mehitable Sanborn were married at Hampton. They lived and he practiced his trade on the hill lot, adding to his land by buying fifty acres of upland and a parcel of meadow on Taylor's river near the Indian graves from Capt. Christopher Palmer in 1671, twenty-four acres from his brother Samuel in 1674 and other lands from Thomas Thurton in 1678.

The Palmer purchase involved Tilton in a series of suits. The town of Hampton, claiming that part of the land was town common, sued Tilton for trespass in 1672, but withdrew the case, issuing a warning to the defendant. The town sued again in 1673, alleging that Tilton had fenced four or five acres near Taylor's river above the old saw-mill which were part of Hampton commons. Tilton won a verdict and the town appealed, but again withdrew in 1674. In 1678 Tilton sued Palmer twice, first for selling him land at Taylor's river which he could not legally hold, and the second time for trespass in taking away a thousand pipe staves from Exeter landing-place. In both cases Tilton won a verdict, and it was ordered that the disputed land be made good. Palmer then sued for payment and lost, but the judgment was reversed on appeal and finally Tilton carried the case to the Court of Assistants in 1679.†

Daniel Tilton served on trial juries in 1683, 1684 and 1694, and on the grand jury in 1683. He was one of several hundred New Hampshire men, anticipating trouble with the Indians, who petitioned the Massachusetts General Court in 1689 to extend the protection of its government over New Hampshire "until their Majesties' pleasure shall be known concerning us." He was a selectman of Hampton in 1692, and was a member of the committee which built the parsonage for Rev. Mr. Cotton. He signed the New Hampshire address to the King and Queen dated August 10, 1692, setting forth that "we are but four

* *Essex Antiquarian*, IV: 10.

† *Records and Files*, V: 101, 273; VI: 427, 430.

poor towns daily exposed from French and Indian enemies" and asking that the province might have equal privileges with Massachusetts.

Tilton represented Hampton in the New Hampshire General Court from 1693 to 1695, in 1702 and 1709, and from 1711 to 1714 when ill health caused his retirement. The peak of his political career came in 1702 when he was elected Speaker. He had been appointed a justice of the Court of Sessions in 1698, but had not qualified.

During the Indian wars of the 1690's, Tilton's house was a garrison. For carrying a military letter from Boston to New Castle in 1694 he received 4s., and in 1696, when a soldier was stationed at his garrison for six months and three days, either he or the soldier received £7 : 6 : 6.

Daniel Tilton died in Hampton on February 10, 1714/5. He did not leave a will and there are no administration papers on file or recorded.

Children, born in Hampton :

- i. ABIGAIL, b. Oct. 28, 1670; m. Nov. 14, 1689, Christopher Page.
- ii. MARY, b. March 9, 1672/3.
- iii. SAMUEL, b. Feb. 14, 1674/5; m. Jan. 7, 1703, Meribah (Page) Shaw, who m. her third husband, Benjamin Sanborn, Nov. 7, 1721. He was a soldier at Fort William and Mary at Newcastle in 1708.
- iv. JOSEPH, b. March 19, 1677; m. (1) Dec. 26, 1698, Margaret Sherburne who d. July 1, 1717; m. (2) Dec. 5, 1717, Elizabeth (Hilliard) Shaw who d. April 19, 1724; m. (3) June 17, 1725, Elizabeth (Chase) Hilliard who survived him, dying Aug. 14, 1765; he d. in Kensington Oct. 24, 1744.
- v. MERCY, b. May 25, 1679; m. Feb. 5, 1706, Samuel Elkins.
- vi. DANIEL, b. Oct. 23, 1680; m. Elizabeth ———; d. in Stratham Sept. 16, 1722.
- vii. DAVID, b. Oct. 30, 1682; m. Jan. 8, 1708, Deborah Batchelder, who m. secondly June 14, 1733, Jonathan Fellows; he d. May 26, 1729.
- viii. JETHRO; m. Nov. 4, 1712, Mary ———.
- ix. MEHITABLE, b. Oct. 2, 1687; m. May 14, 1708, Joseph Lawrence.
- x. HANNAH, b. April 27, 1689; m. Dec. 12, 1712, Nathaniel Healey.

7. LIEUT. ABRAHAM³ TILTON (*Abraham*,² *William*¹) was born about 1666 in Hampton or Kittery, and he was therefore about ten years old when the family moved to Ipswich, where his father brought him up to his own trade as a housewright and millwright. In 1690 he was a lieutenant in the colonial forces under Sir William Phips on the Canada expedition, and seems to have acquired a taste for military life as he was an ensign in Col. Wainwright's company in the expedition to Port Royal in 1707.

On December 11, 1693, at Chebacco, Tilton married Mary Jacob. They settled near her family on land for the purchase of which there is no recorded deed as land of Abraham Tilton is one of the bounds of the acre and a half which his father-in-law, Thomas Jacob, gave him on January 26, 1696/7, "in Consideration of the love and affection which I do bear unto my son-in-law Abraham Tilton . . . and more especially for that the said Tilton hath married with my daughter Mary Jacob, as a gift on marriage."* In 1696 the town granted him permission to build a mill on Mile river in partnership with Edmund and Anthony Potter.

Tilton bought a farm of forty acres, on which was a house, on Mile brook from Thomas Low, jr., in 1699 for £183.† He sold the Low farm in February, 1706/7, to Thomas Manning for £200 and bought for £213 from Thomas Wells the house and farm of sixty acres at Little Chebacco which was his home for the rest of his life. This property had belonged to Rev. John Rogers and to Nathaniel Wells, the father of the grantor, and included in the transfer were free landing at Rogers cove, all the trees on Nathaniel Wells' island and ten or twelve trees on Nathaniel Wells' farm.‡ This land completely surrounded seven acres which belonged to Rev. John Rogers, which Tilton bought from the parson in 1707.§ There are several other smaller purchases of adjoining land recorded, the largest being of sixteen acres of upland and marsh "on way to Castle neck" from Nathaniel Wells in 1709.|| Possibly he built a new house on the Rogers-Wells farm, for in 1707/8 he sold a tenement (the old house?) and six acres, which seem from the bounds to be part of that property, to John Annable.¶ He also sold ten acres of his inheritance from his wife's father, bounded by his own land, to Matthew Whipple in 1710.**

In March, 1723/4, Tilton made a large investment in land, buying for £565 from Hannah Perkins, widow of Capt. Bramsby Perkins, Perkins island near the mouth of the town river on which were a mansion house, barn, warehouse and fishing stages.††

John Appleton of Ipswich in a letter dated September 15,

* Essex Deeds, 12: 65.

† Essex Deeds, 15: 296.

‡ Essex Deeds, 19: 153; 20: 19.

§ Essex Deeds, 20: 174.

|| Essex Deeds, 24: 4.

¶ Essex Deeds, 21: 131.

** Essex Deeds, 26: 94.

†† Essex Deeds, 48: 29.

1724, states that "Lt. Abraham Tilton, the bearer, and a Number of men from this Town are Disposed to Scout the Woods above the Frontiers in Quest of the Indians and to secure the Towns, on the Act of Sixty pounds per Scalp."* Tilton must have been active and strong to undertake this service at the age of fifty-eight. In a Jacob heirship deed of 1730 he is called Capt. Abraham Tilton, which probably testifies to a continued interest in the local militia.

Tilton began, somewhat prematurely, to settle his affairs in 1737, deeding practically all of his property to his three sons by three instruments all dated March 24. To Jacob he gave the Perkins island farm, half an old wood-lot at Chebacco and half an old right at Jeffreys neck. To Daniel went half of the homestead farm with a dwelling house and barn, Knowlton's island on the great creek running down to Castle neck, the marsh bought of Mr. Rogers, half of the old wood-lot at Chebacco and an old thatch-bed bought of the commons committee. To his son Abraham he deeded the other half of the homestead farm with a house and barn, including three acres which the father had given to Daniel in 1729 and which Daniel had quit-claimed back to his father the day before, on which there was possibly a third set of buildings.†

In 1735 "Abraham Tilton and other officers" and soldiers in the Canada expedition of 1690 had been granted a township by the General Court. First called Ipswich Canada, it later became the town of Winchendon, Massachusetts. Abraham Tilton, gentleman, sold his share, which was Lot 30 on the north side of the center line, to Thomas Perley, jr., of Boxford for £40 old tenor bills of credit on February 17, 1742.‡

The sons, Daniel and Abraham, sold the old homestead farm of one hundred acres, more or less, in 1741, which may indicate lessened family prosperity. Mary (Jacob) Tilton died on January 25, 1745, and the old man spent his last decade with his son Abraham. "In consideration of my son's taking care of me in my old age and his promising to bury me at his own cost and charge," he gave to Abraham on December 5, 1755, his remaining property, consisting of four acres on Walker's island, a pair of oxen, a horse, his farm tools and carpenter's tools, a cart, sleds and chains, clothing, plate and buttons (presumably silver), £20 old tenor lent to his daughter Jemima Has-

* *Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony*, II: 52.

† *Essex Deeds*, 75: 218; 73: 18, 41, 61.

‡ *Essex Deeds*, 82: 232.

kell and all of his notes of hand and bonds.* The death of Lt. Abraham Tilton on January 7, 1756, aged ninety, the same age reached by his father, was recorded in Ipswich.

Children, born in Ipswich:

10. i. JACOB, b. Aug. 12, 1694.
11. ii. DANIEL, b. April 2, 1697.
- iii. JEMIMA, b. Nov. 27, 1699; m., int. Dec. 3, 1720, Mark Haskell of Gloucester. She had been published with William Cogswell, sr., on July 26, 1718, if the printed Ipswich record is correct, but did not marry him. A William Cogswell and Jemima Haskell of Gloucester, possibly their descendants, were married Aug. 18, 1781.
12. iv. ABRAHAM, b. July 12, 1702.
- v. MARY, b. Jan. 11, 1705; m., int. Dec. 25, 1728, Jonathan Riggs of Gloucester.

8. SAMUEL³ TILTON (*Abraham*,² *William*¹) was born in Ipswich on April 14, 168-, presumably in the year 1680, that being the year of his baptism in the church at Wenham. He married Sarah Batchelder of Wenham, their intention being published May 7, 1704.

Sarah Tilton was admitted to Wenham church on April 1, 1705, and Samuel Tilton owned the covenant on the following May 20. In 1725 she was in communion with the Ipswich church and he was admitted to that church November 12, 1727.

On June 15, 1741, Samuel Tilton of Ipswich, yeoman, for parental love and affection deeded to his sons John and Joseph Tilton his homestead on which stood two houses and other buildings, a piece of salt marsh in Chebacco marshes, two wood lots in Chebacco woods, possession to be received after their father's decease. As no dower was released Sarah Tilton must have died before 1741.† There is no record of the death of either.

Children:

- i. ABRAHAM (twin), bapt. in Wenham May 6, 1705; m., int. May 11, 1728, Elizabeth Smith, in Ipswich; d. in 1736 in Hopkinton.
- ii. SAMUEL (twin), bapt. in Wenham May 6, 1705; m., int. Nov. 12, 1730, Mary Jeffords, who m. secondly in Hopkinton May 1, 1735, Caleb Clafin; d. in 1734.
- iii. JOHN, bapt. in Wenham May 4, 1707; m. (1) in Ipswich April 6, 1737, Sarah Poland who d. Aug. 29, 1756; m. (2) Feb. 8, 1757, Sarah Choate who m. secondly Sept. 8, 1780, Joseph Batchelder; d. in 1779 in Sudbury, *s.p.*
- iv. JOSEPH, bapt. in Wenham Aug. 21, 1709; m. (1) in Ipswich, int. April 10, 1741, Abigail Brown; m. (2) in Ipswich July 23, 1771,

* Essex Deeds, 102: 286.

† Essex Deeds, 86: 234.

- widow Phebe Dodge who m. thirdly Nov. 14, 1782, Lieut. Jacob Brown; d. at Ipswich Hamlet Jan. 24, 1779, aged 69.
- v. JOSIAH, bapt. in Wenham Aug. 31, 1712; m. in Ipswich Dec. 6, 1737, Lucy Low who m. secondly in Ipswich Oct. 12, 1745, Nathaniel Dane; d. at Ipswich Hamlet between June 18 and Sept. 14, 1741.
 - vi. HANNAH, bapt. in Ipswich May 22, 1715; m. at Ipswich Hamlet Dec. 21, 1742, Samuel Poland, jr.
 - vii. SARAH, bapt. in Ipswich May 12, 1717; m. at Ipswich Hamlet March 1, 1738/9, Caleb Moulton.
 - viii. ISRAEL, bapt. in Ipswich June 7, 1719; no further record.

9. ISAAC³ TILTON (*Abraham*,² *William*¹) was born in Ipswich on May 2, 1695. He married about 1719 Mary —, who was the mother of all his children. They joined the Ipswich Hamlet church on December 24, 1727. Late in life he married secondly the widow Elizabeth Dodge, their intentions being published May 29, 1760. He died in Ipswich February 1, 1764.

The will of Isaac Tilton of Ipswich was made May 10, 1763, and proved February 20, 1764. He left to his wife Elizabeth £26: 13: 4 and everything that she brought from her late husband Dodge's estate. To his son David, all of his real-estate, his "Cloock," his black clothes and his pew in Mr. Nathaniel Rogers' meeting-house. His daughter Sarah Clinton, widow, was to have a room in his house during her widowhood. To his four daughters. "My longest gun" went to his grandson Thomas Kinsman and "my shortest gun" to his grandson Aaron Smith and "my Shoemaker's bench and tools" to his grandson James Clinton. The inventory listed an estate of £602, not including £37 which had come from the Dodge estate. The account discloses the names of the four daughters.*

Children, born in Ipswich:

- i. DAVID, b. May 4, 1721, according to the Ipswich town record, but bapt. May 8, 1720, by Ipswich Hamlet church record, the latter year being the correct one; m. (1) Dec. 21, 1752, Mary Proctor; m. (2) Dec. 13, 1759, Ann Wainwright, who d., his widow (Anna) July 5, 1802, aged 70; he d. May 8, 1786, aged 66. Administration on his estate was granted to his widow, and the property was distributed between her and his sisters Abigail Day, Mary Kinsman, Rachel Smith and Sarah Manning on May 15, 1787.†

The will of widow Anna Tilton of Ipswich was proved July 7, 1803. She left her real estate to Mary Fuller "which I brought up in my family." To Abigail Carns, formerly Abigail Wainwright, "my family arms and family pictures." To Mary, wife of Jeremiah Spiller, "my tea ground Chintz gown." To Rachel, wife of William Burnham, "my Broglio gown." Executor: Aaron Smith.‡

* Essex Probate, 341: 101, 177.

† Essex Probate, 358: 384; 359: 89, 92.

‡ Essex Probate, 369: 445.

- ii. JEMIMA, bapt. at Ipswich Hamlet Dec. 3, 1721; d. young.
- iii. MARY, b. Sept. 6, 1723; m., int. April 25, 1745, Thomas Kinsman.
- iv. SARAH, b. July 4, 1725; m. (1), int. July 19, 1743, James Clinton; m. (2), int. Nov. 10, 1770, Capt. Richard Manning.
- v. JEMIMA, bapt. at Ipswich Hamlet May 14, 1727; d. young, probably in Jan., 1728.
- vi. ABIGAIL, b. April 4, 1729; m., int. Oct. 28, 1752, Abner Day.
- vii. RACHEL, b. Sept. 13, 1731; m. Jan. 15, 1754, Zebulon Smith.

10. CAPT. JACOB⁴ TILTON (*Abraham*,³ *Abraham*,² *William*¹) was born in Ipswich August 12, 1694. He married Mercy Emerson, their intention being published in Ipswich July 27, 1723. He is said to have died in Newmarket, New Hampshire, in 1763/4, but the record is not in the Newmarket books nor are there any probate papers for his estate.

On June 14, 1722, Lieut. Jacob Tilton, his brother Daniel and a boy were at Fox Bay in their schooner, lying at anchor, when six Indians, the leader a Penobscot chief, put out from shore in two canoes, boarded the schooner and descended into the forecabin. After some parley, they seized and bound the Tiltens but only after they had struggled to the deck. Sending two of the Indians ashore to bear the news, the chief and the three others began to plunder the schooner, failing to notice that Daniel Tilton had managed to free his hands sufficiently to grasp a splitting knife which lay near by. Seizing an opportune moment when all four Indians had ceased to watch him, Daniel cut his own bonds, ran to Jacob and freed him. Then began a bloody battle which ended when the brothers had thrown three of the Indians overboard to drown while the fourth leapt into the sea and swam to shore. Almost immediately six more canoes loaded with Indians put out from shore, but Daniel seized an ax, cut the cable, hoisted sail and soon distanced their enemies. After an agonizing twenty-four hours they made Matinicus, where their wounds were dressed, and several days later they sailed into Ipswich harbor.

This adventure naturally created a great sensation and a local verse-maker, "W.G." (probably William Giddings), who heard the story from the Tiltens's own lips, wrote "A Tragedy of the Sea/a Brief Narrative or Poem/Giving an Account of the hostile Actions of some Pagan Indians towards Lieutenant Jacob Tilton, and his brother Daniel Tilton, both of the town of Ipswich, as they were on board of a small vessel at the Eastward; which happened in the summer time, in the year 1722. With an Account of the Valiant Exploits of the said Tiltens,

and their victorious Conquest over their insulting enemies.”*

Jacob Tilton sold out in Ipswich about 1739 and moved to Newmarket, New Hampshire. He took part in the Louisburg expedition of 1745, being commissioned captain in Col. Samuel Moore's New Hampshire regiment on March 1, 1744. His many real estate transactions in Newmarket run from 1742 to 1760.

Children, baptized in Ipswich:

- i. JACOB, bapt. Dec. 20, 1724; d. July 19, 1736.
- ii. NATHANIEL, bapt. Sept. 11, 1726; m. Abigail Gilman; became the first settler of Sanbornton, N. H., after selling out in Epping, their first home, in 1763.
- iii. JOSEPH, bapt. May 25, 1728; no further record.
- iv. MARY, bapt. Jan. 11, 1729; no further record.
- v. JOHN, bapt. Dec. 17, 1732; no further record.
- vi. WILLIAM, bapt. Sept. 29, 1734; d. July 23, 1736.
- vii. SAMUEL, bapt. April 4, 1736; m. Nov. 26, 1754, his cousin Jemima Tilton of Ipswich.
- viii. JACOB, bapt. Oct. 30, 1737; d. Nov. 20, 1737.
- ix. SUSANNA, b. about 1740; m. Benjamin Slade of Portsmouth.

11. CAPT. DANIEL⁴ TILTON (*Abraham*,³ *Abraham*,² *William*¹) was born in Ipswich on April 2, 1697. He married Sarah Dutch, their intention being published November 20, 1725. He died in the winter of 1758-1759, and his widow in 1770, her tombstone in Newburyport being inscribed "Here lies interred Mrs. Sarah Tilton, Consort of Capt. Daniel Tilton, who deceased May 2nd, 1770, in the 62 years of her age."

The story of the attack by Indians on Daniel and his brother Jacob Tilton while their schooner lay at anchor in Fox Bay in Maine has been told in the account of Capt. Jacob Tilton. Daniel was a "coaster," trading, apparently without great success, in the harbor settlements of northern New England, but in 1737 he reverted to the family trades of carpenter and housewright to which he had been brought up by his father. He took part in the Louisburg expedition under Sir William Pepperell, being commissioned lieutenant of the 2nd company, 5th Massachusetts regiment, on February 7, 1744.† Sometime after 1749

* The narrative was printed in broadside form in 1722-1723 and reprinted in 1774 by Isaiah Thomas and partner of Newburyport. A third printing, by W. & J. Gilman of Boston, came out in 1834, while in 1848 the narrative appeared in the *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, contributed by "L" who stated in the accompanying letter that he was a great-grandson of Daniel Tilton and that his copy was made from the broadside of 1774 "cherished with affectionate care by a respected relative . . . and which hung in her apartments scrupulously enclosed in black frame and glass." "L" was undoubtedly George Lunt of Newburyport and Boston who fits the description of relationship, while the respected relative was probably Lunt's maiden aunt, Hepsibah Tilton. It has since been reprinted in 1852, 1885, and 1930. No copies of the first and second broadsides are known to be in existence.

† The Daniel Tilton who died in service while on the expedition was Daniel⁴ (*Daniel*,³ *Daniel*,² *William*¹) of Hampton.

Daniel Tilton left Ipswich and settled his family in Newbury. From the evidence of his estate papers it seems probable that he was again in the colonial service in the French war and lost his life.

Tilton had built on his father's land by 1729 when his father deeded him three acres taking in a spring near Daniel's house,* but in 1732/3 Ebenezer Smith sold to Daniel Tilton, coaster, a small lot on which stood a barn, situated in the town on the Meeting House hill road on which Tilton built a new house in which he lived.† In 1737 as a preliminary step toward the division of his father's estate, Daniel Tilton, carpenter, sold back the three acres which his father had given him eight years before.‡

In February, 1738/9, Thomas Hancock of Boston, merchant, recovered judgment in an action for debt in the sum of £265 against James McCrillis, trader, and Daniel Tilton, housewright, both of Ipswich, as a result of which Daniel Tilton's house and land "on the highway leading down the Meeting house hill" were attached, the property being appraised at £278. On August 23, 1740, Tilton gave Hancock a bond for £584 and a mortgage on the house and land, which on the following November 11 he sold for £325 to Christian Wainwright, gentlewoman. With this £325 he proceeded to pay off the mortgage to Hancock. These financial difficulties doubtless led to his sale in 1741 of his share of the paternal homestead.§ In Newbury Tilton does not seem to have owned land.

Sarah Tilton was appointed administratrix of her late husband Capt. Daniel Tilton's estate on February 26, 1759. The inventory which she brought in covered adequate house furnishings, clothing, books and three silver spoons, but the two principal items were wages of £37 due from Col. Winslow and of £25 due from John Smith. The debts, however, were twice the amount of the estate, and it was declared insolvent. After an allowance to the widow of £20 for necessaries and £6 for mourning, and the payment of fees and expenses, including the services of a "Man & horse to Boston for ye Money," the creditors received between a quarter and third of their claims.||

* Essex Deeds, 53: 78.

† Essex Deeds, 68: 149.

‡ Essex Deeds, 73: 61.

§ Essex Deeds, 78: 123; 79: 168; 80: 295; 81: 262; 83: 102.

|| Essex Probate, 886: 83; 888: 508-5.

Children, baptized in Ipswich:

- i. DANIEL, bapt. Nov. 20, 1726; d. June 16, 1728.
- ii. DANIEL, bapt. Sept. 29, 1728; m. in Ipswich Feb. 6, 1752, Lucy BROWN. His mother Sarah Tilton was appointed administratrix of his estate Feb. 26, 1759, the same day on which she was made administratrix of his father's property, which suggests that the father and son died at the same time and in the same unknown circumstances.
- iii. SARAH, bapt. Feb. 14, 1730; m. in Newbury March 12, 1753, Oliver Moody, jr.
13. iv. STEPHEN, b. Feb. 25, 1732.
- v. BENJAMIN, bapt. March 22, 1734; d. Aug. 14, 1747.
- vi. HANNAH, bapt. March 20, 1736; m. in Newbury Sept. 26, 1759, Richard Kent, 3d.
- vii. PATIENCE, bapt. April 15, 1739; d. April 23, 1739.
- viii. ELIZABETH, b. Sept. 4, 1740, daughter of Daniel and *Elizabeth* (in error); published with Arthur Forgeson in Newbury Feb. 2, 1762, probably did not marry him but did marry Stephen Hale in Newbury Oct. 19, 1767.
- ix. JOB, bapt. June 26, 1742; no further record.
- x. ISAAC, bapt. Oct. 2, 1743; d. in Newbury Oct. 8, 1800, probably unmarried.
14. xi. NATHANIEL, bapt. Feb. 3, 1744/5.
- xii. MARY, bapt. Dec. 6, 1747; probably d. young.
- xiii. BENJAMIN, bapt. Nov. 19, 1749. He and his sister Mary probably died young as no guardian was appointed for them as in the case of their next older brother Nathaniel.

12. ABRAHAM⁴ TILTON (*Abraham*,³ *Abraham*,² *William*¹) was born in Ipswich July 12, 1702. Until the death of his grandfather on March 28, 1728, he was Abraham Tilton, 3d, in the Ipswich records. On April 1, 1727, he and Margaret Dow published their intention to marry, but apparently changed their minds unless Margaret died soon after marriage, for on March 8, 1728, Tilton was again published, this time with Susanna Harris. They were married on August 14, 1728. In a deed of 1762 there is no release of dower, so Susanna (Harris) Tilton may have died before that year. In Portsmouth on April 28, 1763, Abraham Tilton married Anna Raynes, possibly a widow, who was living in 1781.

In 1734 and 1735 Tilton's father-in-law, John Harris of Ipswich, barber, and his brother-in-law, William Harris of Beverly, mariner, deeded to him two small lots lying between the Harris homestead and the Col. Samuel Appleton place in Ipswich village, on the south side of the river.* Tilton was then a carpenter, but later was called housewright.

Joining with his brother Daniel, Abraham Tilton disposed of his one-half share of their father's homestead in 1741. On

* Essex Deeds, 62: 246; 68: 247.

December 4, 1760, William Booker of York, fisherman, for £66: 13: 4 sold to Abraham Tilton of Ipswich, housewright, that island in York "on which I now dwell lying over against the Mouth of said York Harbour containing about Eight Acres of Land and March, being the same Island I purchased of Sir William Pepperell."* Tilton was "of York" in 1762 when he sold Ipswich property.† On February 13, 1781, Abraham Tilton of York, yeoman, sold the island "which I purchased of William Booker late of York, deceased" to John Barret (also called Bennett in the deed as recorded) and Thomas Harmon, his wife Anne Tilton relinquishing her dower.‡

Abraham Tilton died in York on December 25, 1786. His estate was not in probate. There were no Tiltons in York when the Census of 1790 was taken.

Children, baptized in Ipswich:

- i. FRANCIS, bapt. Dec. 1, 1728; d. Dec. 26, 1728.
- ii. FRANCIS, bapt. Dec. 21, 1729. He was living in Newbury when he died in 1750, his father being appointed to administer his estate on Feb. 11, 1750/1.§
- iii. JEMIMA, bapt. March 5, 1731; m. Nov. 26, 1754, her cousin Samuel Tilton of Newmarket, N. H.
- iv. SUSANNA, bapt. Sept. 8, 1734; m. Dec. 25, 1754, Job Day of Gloucester.
- v. LUCY, bapt. Sept. 19, 1736.
- vi. ABRAHAM, bapt. May 1, 1739; m. (1) ———; m. (2) int. at Edgecomb Aug. 29, 1791, Elizabeth ——— of a place called Medomech; d. in 1796 or 1797. He settled in Edgecomb, Lincoln county, Maine.

The will of Abraham Tilton was made Feb. 21, 1796, and proved Jan. 6, 1797. To his daughter Susanna Seavey, \$1 as she had had her share at marriage. To his son Samuel Tilton, \$1 as he had had his share at his freedom. To his daughters Sarah and Mary Tilton, each one-half of their own mother's furniture. To Sarah, her own mother's apparel and her step-mother's furniture and apparel. Remainder to be equally divided among his children Benjamin, Daniel, Abraham, Charles, Andrew, John, Mary and Sarah. Executor: son Benjamin Tilton. Job Day, his brother-in-law, was one of three who took the inventory of \$801.||

Children:

1. *Susanna*; m. in Edgecomb, int. Dec. 10, 1788, Stephen Seavey of Cetary (Kittery).
2. *Samuel*.
3. *Benjamin*; m. in Edgecomb Dec. 7, 1801, Betsey Hood who d. in Edgecomb March 21, 1820, aged 40; Capt.

* Where the Marshall House now stands and no longer an island. York Deeds, 34: 57.

† Essex Deeds, 124: 73.

‡ York Deeds, 46: 214.

§ Essex Probate, 329: 469.

|| Lincoln Probate, VII: 105-6.

The Ancestry of Phoebe Tilton

- Benjamin Tilton d. in Edgecomb March 8, 1821, aged 51.
4. *Daniel*; m., int. March 1, 1799, Huldah Brier of Boothbay; Capt. Daniel Tilton d. in Edgecomb May 7, 1823, aged 51.
 5. *Abraham*; m., int. Dec. 23, 1801, Mary Nicholas of Bilgerica.
 6. *Charles*.
 7. *Andrew*.
 8. *John*; m., int. Oct. 12, 1809, Eunice Perkins of New-castle.
 9. *Mary*; m. Sept. 3, 1801, Nathaniel Tower.
 10. *Sarah*; m., int. Aug. 30, 1798, Joseph Burnham.
- vii. *MARY*, bapt. Nov. 29, 1741; d. young.
 - viii. *JACOB*, bapt. Sept. 25, 1743; d. June 8, 1744.
 - ix. *JACOB*, bapt. April 14, 1745; d. young.
 - x. *MARY*, bapt. Oct. 19, 1746.
 - xi. *JACOB*, bapt. Nov. 13, 1748.
 - xii. *JOHN*, bapt. Sept. 9, 1750.
 - xiii. *PEGGY*, bapt. Dec. 1, 1751.

13. *STEPHEN*⁵ *TILTON* (*Daniel*,⁴ *Abraham*,³ *Abraham*,² *William*¹) was born in Ipswich February 25, 1732. He married Elizabeth Gage in Newbury on January 20, 1761. In 1764 he was appointed guardian of his younger brother Nathaniel Tilton. This is the last record found of him and it is presumed that he died soon afterward.

Child, born in Newbury:

- i. *DANIEL*, b. Sept. 11, 1762; m. in Newbury Oct. 15, 1786, Mary Wells Stickney; buried in Newbury Aug. 28, 1794.

Children, born in Newbury:

1. *Molly*, b. June 10, 1787; d. Dec. 14, 1811, unmarried, in Newburyport.
2. *Daniel*, b. March 10, 1789; m., int. March 9, 1811, Sarah Jaques.
3. *Sarah Williams*, b. May 13, 1791; m. May 26, 1811, Enoch Jaques, jr.
4. *Margaret*, b. July 2, 1793; d. Aug. 23, 1813, aged 20.

14. *NATHANIEL*⁵ *TILTON* (*Daniel*,⁴ *Abraham*,³ *Abraham*,² *William*¹) was born in Ipswich on January 22, 1745. He married Anne Safford in Newbury, their intention being published September 20, 1766. The date of his death (before April 7, 1786) is not recorded, but widow Anne Tilton died in Newburyport on September 26, 1820, aged seventy-six.

Tilton was brought up in the thickly settled part of Newbury on the Merrimac river which became Newburyport. His brother Stephen was appointed his guardian, Nathaniel Dutch

and James Foster, sureties, November 5, 1764.* He adopted the trade of boat-builder. When the news of the battle of Lexington reached Newburyport he left the town at eleven o'clock at night, after what must have been a hasty period of excited preparation, as acting corporal in Capt. Moses Nowell's company of minute men. They were gone only four days, but later on July 8, 1775, Nathaniel enlisted as a private for four months' service, and again on November 1, 1775, for service of two months, five days. The difficulties of constructing an army from personnel enlisted for such short periods were almost insuperable, but, as we know, were eventually successfully overcome.

The town of Newburyport lived by the building of ships and the traffic of the sea, and a house, a shop and a small garden now took the place of a spacious farm in Tilton economy. On March 30, 1768, Edmund Sweat of Newburyport, rope-maker, sold to Nathaniel Tilton, boat-builder, for £23: 10: 0, a lot of land in Newburyport containing twenty-one rods and a half, bounded northeasterly on a way (Temple street), northwesterly on the land of John Wood, southwesterly on the land of Skipper Eliot's heirs and southeasterly on John Wood's land, and on May 1, 1773, he added to it two rods bounded northwesterly by his own garden by a purchase from Willoughby Favour, caulker.† Tilton built a house on this lot, and on February 3, 1777, sold or mortgaged the house and lot on Temple street to John Wood, baker, for £100, Wood deeding it back to Tilton for the same sum on the following December 15.‡ Two days later, for £550, Tilton deeded the house and about half of the land to Derby Driscoll, mariner.§ Possibly he had built another house on the other half for his own occupancy.

On April 10, 1786, widow Anna Tilton received as a gift from her brother James Safford of Newbury, yeoman, a lot of land containing eight rods in Newburyport, bounded on two sides by his own land, which lot, no house being mentioned, she deeded to her son Stephen Tilton on November 10, 1794.||

Children, born in Newbury:

15. i. STEPHEN, b. July 10, 1767.
- ii. HESIBAH SAFFORD, b. March 29, 1769; d. in Newbury Nov. 2, 1851.
She was supported by a small property left her by her uncle

* Essex Probate, 341: 442.

† Essex Deeds, 181: 241, 242.

‡ Essex Deeds, 134: 298; 135: 202.

§ Essex Deeds, 135: 203.

|| Essex Deeds, 145: 217; 158: 202.

James Safford, "Aunt Hepsy" was a loved family character and was undoubtedly the original of "Aunt Judith" in *Old New England Traits*, written by her nephew George Lunt.

- iii. NATHANIEL, b. March 21, 1771; m. in Newburyport March 5, 1801, Sarah Kent; d. Dec. 11, 1846, aged 76, in Newbury. He was a painter by trade.

Children, born in Newbury:

1. *Benjamin*, b. March 10, 1802; m., int. Oct. 27, 1827, Rebecca Goodwin.
2. *Nathaniel*, b. Jan. 20, 1807; d. Dec. 31, 1830, aged 24. On Nov. 27, 1830, a month before his death, his intention to marry Nancy Goodwin was published. They married and a daughter, Harriet Ann, d. of consumption at Newbury Dec. 17, 1845, aged 14 years, 7 months.
3. *Sarah Anne*, b. Dec. 5, 1810; m., int. Jan. 11, 1832, Isaac Gunnison.
- iv. ANNA, b. Feb., 1773; m. (1) in Newburyport June 8, 1795, John Goodhue; m. (2) Benjamin Hale who kept the Eastern Stage House in Boston.
- v. PHOEBE, b. Nov. 27, 1774; m. in Newburyport May 13, 1795, Capt. Abel Lunt. Her ancestry is the subject of this pamphlet.
- vi. DANIEL, b. Jan. 28, 1777; apparently d. before the 1790 Census.

15. STEPHEN⁶ TILTON (*Nathaniel*,⁵ *Daniel*,⁴ *Abraham*,³ *Abraham*,² *William*¹) was born in Newbury July 10, 1767. He married Huldah Palmer on February 25, 1790, in Newburyport. She died on August 29, 1793, in her twenty-sixth year. On December 31, 1795, he married Elizabeth Patten in Newburyport. He died July 12, 1799, aged thirty-two, of yellow fever.

Tilton was a painter by trade, and made several ventures in foreign commerce with his brother-in-law Capt. Abel Lunt. Before his early death he was considered one of the most promising young men in Newburyport. Administration on his estate was granted to Timothy Palmer on August 7, 1799. The inventory listed, among other property, a dwelling house on Beck street and Ship lane worth \$1000 and a store on Lower Long wharf valued at \$850.* The widow Elizabeth Tilton, as guardian of John Goodhue Tilton, sold the store on *Bartlett* wharf to her step-son Stephen Tilton, merchant, March 12, 1819.†

Children, born in Newburyport, by first wife:

- i. STEPHEN, b. Aug. 22, 1790; m. in Newburyport Oct. 6, 1812, Priscilla Hale Brown; d. in Boston Jan. 12, 1857; his widow d. Dec. 13, 1862. Left an orphan at the age of nine, he was brought up

* Essex Probate, 367: 55, 129.

† Essex Deeds, 219: 257.

by his maternal uncle, Timothy Palmer, an architect and engineer. At the proper time Mr. Palmer placed the boy in the counting-house of Joseph Brown, commission merchant and auctioneer, of Newburyport. Young Tilton married his master's daughter and continued the business until 1836 when he moved to Boston and founded the firm of Stephen Tilton & Co., trading with the south. In Newburyport Stephen Tilton was a selectman in 1832, and in 1856 he was elected to represent Boston in the General Court. He was a member of the first boards of directors of the Merchants National Bank and the Merchants Insurance Co. in 1831.

As will be seen, Stephen and Priscilla Tilton had a family of twelve children, all of whom lived to grow up, and they were childhood friends of their second cousins, the Wildes boys and girls, who were grandchildren of Phoebe (Tilton) Lunt. An early photograph of the eight Tilton brothers is in existence.

Children, born in Newburyport:

1. *Elizabeth*, b. Feb. 24, 1813; d. Jan. 16, 1866.
 2. *Mary Palmer*, b. May 22, 1814; m. in Boston July 6, 1843, George F. Williams.
 3. *Margaret Ann Ross*, b. Sept. 4, 1815; m. April 23, 1835, Rev. Joseph Abbott of Beverly.
 4. *Stephen*, b. May 15, 1817; m. April 12, 1843, Ruth Ann Jewett of Rowley; d. Dec. 15, 1870.
 5. *Joseph Brown*, b. Feb. 14, 1819; m. (1) in 1846, Caroline Goodhue of Providence who d. Aug. 1, 1851; m. (2) Oct. 9, 1856, Josephine Barclay of Philadelphia.
 6. *John*, b. Aug. 23, 1820; m. Mary Badger Sumner of Boston.
 7. *Charles Thomas*, b. Dec. 1, 1822; m. Mary Ann Bennett of Beverly who d. Aug. 1, 1871.
 8. *Warren*, b. Aug. 3, 1824; m. Feb. 25, 1851, Sarah Ann Auld of Washington, D. C.
 9. *George Henry*, b. April 29, 1826; m. Elizabeth W. Porter of Wenham.
 10. *William Stowell*, b. Feb. 1, 1828; m. Elizabeth Loring of Boston.
 11. *Frederick Augustus*, b. Jan. 3, 1830; m. Mary Elizabeth Griffith of Baltimore; d. Sept. 8, 1866, and was buried at sea from S. S. *Golconda* in the Indian Ocean.
 12. *Maria Abbott*, b. Dec. 16, 1835; d. unmarried.
- ii. **MARY**, d. Sept. 14, 1793, aged eight months.

By second wife:

- iii. **JOHN GOODHUE** (posthumous), b. Aug. 18, 1799; m. in Dover, N. H., in 1823, Mary Ann Hanson; d. in Longwood Jan. 23, 1891. Guardianship of John G. Tilton, aged ten months, son of Stephen Tilton, late of Newburyport, was granted to Elizabeth Tilton July 7, 1800, Thomas Patten and Thomas Patten, jr., sureties. He entered business in his native town when barely twenty-one years of age, and continued there as a publisher and bookseller until 1860 when he moved to Boston and entered the flour and grain business.

The Ancestry of Phoebe Tilton

Children :

1. *Mary Elizabeth*, b. Aug. 27, 1824; m. W. W. Palmer.
2. *Martha Ann*, b. July 21, 1827; m. George F. Williams.
3. *John Edward*, b. May 3, 1829; d. Feb. 20, 1831.
4. *John Edward*, b. May 8, 1831; m. Kate H. Rockwood of Tennessee; d. April 7, 1866.
5. *Stephen Willis*, b. April 16, 1833; m. his second cousin once removed, Frances Ellen Tilton; d. in Brookline Feb. 19, 1911.
6. *Hubbard Winslow*, b. July 1, 1835; m. Mary H. Callender.
7. *Frances Emily*, b. May 15, 1838; m. David A. Andrews.

II
CRAM, OF HAMPTON

CRAM

1. JOHN CRAM of Well, in the parish of Alford, co. Lincoln, was born about 1540. Probably by more than one wife, as the year span is great, he had six children baptized at Alford between 1565 and 1590. An older son, Thomas, is added to the list with reasonable certainty inasmuch as he left legacies in his will to a daughter of one of John Cram's sons and to one of his (John's) daughters, although he does not specifically call the legatees "cousin" or sister.*

Children, the last six baptized at Alford:

2. i. THOMAS, b. about 1563.
- ii. WILLIAM, bapt. Nov. 10, 1565; m. (1) at Alford Nov. 18, 1596, Elizabeth Chapman who was buried at Bilsby, co. Lincoln, June 11, 1616; m. (2) at Bilsby April 14, 1618, Audrey White; buried at Bilsby Feb. 8, 1624/5.
- iii. FRANCIS, bapt. Dec. 21, 1572.
- iv. CHRISTIAN, bapt. Jan. 1582/3; m. (1), lic. June 17, 1613, Thomas Raithby; m. (2) at Hannah, co. Lincoln, Oct. 27, 1631, Theophilus Drury; m. (3) at Hannah July 26, 1636, John Newman; named in the will of her presumed brother Thomas Cram in 1638.
- v. MARY, bapt. Sept. 16, 1587.
- vi. NICHOLAS, bapt. Feb. 14, 1588/9.
- vii. ELIZABETH, bapt. May 16, 1590; buried April 24, 1592.

2. THOMAS² CRAM (*John*¹), was born, probably at Alford, co. Lincoln, about 1563. His wife Jane ——— was buried at Bilsby, co. Lincoln, February 17, 1612/3.

His will, made April 3, 1638, was proved March 30, 1639. To his son Samewell Cramb, his wife and children. To Austin Couper of Bilsby, his wife and children. To Alice Crambe and her two sons. To Gaine (Jane) Cramb, daughter of Richard Cramb. To Thomas Masonne of Asswerby in the parish of Bilsby, his wife and one son. To his son John Crambe. To Lidea Crame, daughter to Willyam Crame. To Cerstine (Christian) Newman of Hannay in the Marsh and her six sons. Residue to his son Thomas Crambe of Willoughby in the Marsh, executor. Witnesses: Thom' Overton, Martye Hansume.†

Children, all but the first baptized at Bilsby:

- i. RICHARD, bapt. at Alford April 19, 1589; m. Alice ———; d. about 1636.
- ii. THOMAS, bapt. Nov. 23, 1595; m. (1) ———; m. (2) at Willoughby May 3, 1632, widow Mary (Wheelwright) Teisdale.
3. iii. JOHN, bapt. Jan. 29, 1596/7.

* *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 69: 64.
† Consistory Court of Lincoln, 1639, fo. 102.

- iv. SAMUEL, bapt. Mar. 9, 1598/9; m. ———; buried at Willoughby Sept. 16, 1638.
- v. JANE, bapt. Oct. 24, 1602; m. at Bilsby July 27, 1628, Augustine Cooper.
- vi. THAMAR, bapt. Dec. 4, 1604; m. at Bilsby Oct. 10, 1633, Thomas Mason of Asserby.
- vii. ANNE, bapt. Feb. 8, 1605/6; presumably d. unmarried.
- viii. SYLVESTER, bapt. Sept. 16, 1610; buried June 8, 1611.

3. JOHN³ CRAM (*Thomas*,² *John*¹) was baptized at Bilsby, co. Lincoln, January 29, 1596/7. He married at Bilsby in June, 1624, Esther White. After 1629 they seem to have lived in Farlsthorne, co. Lincoln, where one child was baptized and one buried. By 1636 the family came to New England and settled first at Muddy River (Brookline) in Massachusetts Bay. Bilsby was the Rev. John Wheelwright's parish in England, and it was undoubtedly due to his great influence with parishioners and neighbors that the Crams migrated.

Still a Wheelwright man, Cram left Massachusetts with the exiled minister in 1637 and settled in Exeter where he signed the "combination" or agreement for local self-government in 1639. He was a selectman of Exeter in 1648 and 1649, and served on grand juries in 1645 and 1648. In 1643 he signed a petition to the Massachusetts General Court that Exeter, the last New Hampshire town to yield, be included within its jurisdiction, with what must have been great reluctance. A more humble and humiliating petition to the same effect and of the same period is without his name. Exeter made him a grant in 1643 and another of forty acres in 1648. In 1645 he signed a petition asking the General Court not to take land from Exeter and add it to Hampton or Dover, and to appoint three commissioners to end small causes. In 1646 he agreed with others to buy the house of Mr. Wheelwright, who had again fled from Massachusetts, for the use of Mr. Norcross.

Cram moved to Hampton by 1650, where Richard Swayne gave him land because of "love and brotherly (perhaps Christian) affection." He served on a grand jury in 1662. In 1665 he deeded his property to his sons Benjamin and Thomas in consideration of life support. His wife Esther Cram died in Hampton May 16, 1677. He died there March 5, 1681/2, the record adding "good old John Cram one just in his generation."

Children:

- i. ELIZABETH, bapt. at Bilsby March 11, 1625/6.
- ii. JOHN, bapt. at Bilsby Feb. 15, 1627/8; d. young.

- iii. JOHN, bapt. at Bilsby April 13, 1629; buried in Farlsthorpe April 16, 1633.
- iv. JOSEPH, bapt. at Farlsthorpe Oct. 5, 1632; drowned at Exeter June 24, 1648.
- v. BENJAMIN; m. Nov. 28, 1662, Argentine Cromwell, who survived him and was mentioned in his will, made March 1, 1707/8, proved Dec. 5, 1711.
- vi. THOMAS; m. Elizabeth Weare Dec. 20, 1671. He was "about 65" in 1709, and "about 69" in 1713. In 1674 he and other Hampton men were admonished for calling a Quaker meeting.*
- vii. MARY; m. Jan. 25, 1666, Abraham Tilton. (*See Tilton.*)
- viii. LYDIA, b. at Exeter July 27, 1648; living in 1665.

* *Records and Files*, V: 298.

III
JACOB, OF IPSWICH

JACOB

I. RICHARD JACOB came to New England in the ship *Mary and John*, which, the "last of February," 1633/4, was lying in the Thames with nine others, about to embark passengers for America, when Orders in Council were issued regulating the conduct of the passengers on the voyage and requiring them to take the Oaths of Allegiance and Supremacy before departure. The *Mary and John* seems to have proceeded to Southampton and taken on board a large number of emigrants who, according to the records of that port, took the required oaths on the twenty-fourth and twenty-sixth of March. Southampton is a port convenient for travellers from Wiltshire and Hampshire and some of the passengers are identified as natives of these counties. There were Jacob families in Wiltshire, but thus far no place has been found in them for our emigrant.

Jacob took oath as freeman May 6, 1635, and is first mentioned in the records of Ipswich, where he settled, in that year. He was married by 1638 to Martha Appleton. They did not occupy the house lot in the village which had been granted to him—an acre and a half and eight rods having a house lot of Robert Mussey's on the northwest, the highway to the common on the south and southeast and butting upon the mill street on the northwest—but took up a farm, originally owned by John Winthrop, jr., but regranted by the town to Jacob on August 20, 1638, consisting of forty acres on the further side of Mile brook. Over Mile river he built a bridge and in 1658 a town order was passed "that George Giddings and Edward Bragg are appoynted to lay out a highway through Mr. Saltingstall's 40 acres and a part of John Andrews his farm to the Bridge over the River to Richard Jacob's House a rod and a half wide." In order to obtain full control of the bridge and its approaches, Jacob bought from Andrews an acre of the latter's land.* After his death, his son Nathaniel had much trouble and many law-suits with the Fellows family who had bought the Andrews farm and who went so far as to chop down the bridge and plow a ditch through the Jacobs' road, but Nathaniel eventually proved his good title.†

In 1661 Sergt. Jacob sued William Averill for failing to complete a new house at the farm, the contract having been made in 1659. From the evidence it appears that the old house,

* *Candlewood*, by T. F. Waters. Ipswich Historical Society's Proceedings XVI: 41.

† *Records and Files*, VII, by index.

with new sills, was to be moved and the new frame raised on its site. Averill was to erect a building eighteen feet square and thirteen feet stud, to provide clapboards and shingles and lay them, to lay three floors with joist and board, to make two "stole" windows of five lights apiece and two clerestory windows of four lights apiece, also a garret window. Partitions and doors were "to close the rooms complete." He was also to make "a table and frame of 12 or 14 foot Long and a joyned forme of 4 foot long and a binch behind the table."*

He was an Ipswich commoner in 1641 and by 1654 a sergeant in the town's train-band. He was a member of the building committee for the first bridge built for carts over the Ipswich river in 1646/7. In the county court he served as trial juror in 1641, 1651, 1653, 1662 and 1663, and as grand juror in 1649, 1654, 1656 and 1658. In 1664, as one of the twenty-seven wealthiest men in the town, he received two shares on Plum island, which was apparently divided by the local authorities on the principle that to him that hath shall be given.

Martha (Appleton) Jacob died September 8, 1659, and he took as his second wife Joan Hale, widow of Robert Hale of Charlestown, who survived him and returned to Charlestown, where she died November 28, 1681.

Richard Jacob made his will September 6, 1672, and it was proved on the following October 5. To his wife Joanna he left what he had agreed and engaged by a writing under his hand dated May 3, 1669. To his son Thomas, his eldest son living, all land on the west side of the road to Boston, twelve acres of meadow below "ye Sluce of my farm adjoining," the upland within the standing fence and six or eight acres of meadow bought from Henry Kimball adjoining Mr. Saltonstall's farm, all of which was in Thomas's possession. Thomas was to pay his step-mother 50s. yearly and £50 to his sister Martha within one year of her father's death, if she were married, but, if not, 8d. per pound until her marriage or until she became twenty-eight years of age, when she could demand the £50. Thomas was to have a right of way to the twelve acres of meadow, £25 worth of stock which had been delivered to him when he entered upon his farm and thirteen bushels of apples from his father's farm for seven years. To son John, £100. To son Nathaniel, one half of the farm near Topsfield, being the half next to Isaac Cummings' farm, he to pay his step-mother 30s. yearly

* *Records and Files*, II: 266.

and £60 to his sister Judith on terms identical with Thomas's obligation to Martha. To son Joseph, the half of the Topsfield farm near Goodman How, he to pay his step-mother 20s. yearly and £40 to the executor, when he came of age. To daughter Martha, £50 in addition to that paid by Thomas and on the same conditions, a considerable part to be paid in household stuff, a feather bed with furnishings to be a part. To daughter Judith, a similar legacy of £40. To grandchild Lydia Jacob, £100 within one year of her marriage or when she should come of age. If either of the two youngest sons should die before they were of age to receive their portions, they were to be equally divided among their surviving brothers and sisters. For his daughter-in-law, widow of his son Samuel, he made careful provision: she was to live in half of the house she then occupied ("The Parler, & Chamber, & Garrett over them with the little parler & seller under it"), to have the benefit of the adjoining orchard and the easterly bay of the barn and the leanto, six acres of tillage land, half in one field and half in another, liberty to cut eight loads of hay yearly, to keep one horse, four cows, ten sheep and twelve swine; if she married, the executor was to pay her £6 *per annum* until her child married or came of age, and thereafter £3 *per annum*, but she was to deliver up to the executor all of the land and stock heretofore provided for her; in return for an acquittance from all claims that might be made by her or through her and his late son, she in turn was to be acquitted of all claims which the testator might have against them for debts and rents. Residue to son Richard, executor, and the farm lately improved by his son Samuel and the rest of the testator's lands bound over for the payment of legacies. Overseers: loving brothers Capt. John Appleton and Lieut. Samuel Appleton, good friend Mr. Richard Hubbard. Witnesses: John Appleton, Samuel Appleton, William Goodhue. John Whipple, sr., and John Burnham, sr., took the inventory October 4, 1672. The two farms at Mile brook were worth £550 and the two at Topsfield £300. There was furniture, household linen, clothing and farm stock in substantial quantity, but few articles of luxury—no silver and no books. The total came to £1,120, a large estate.*

Children:

- i. SAMUEL, b. about 1639; about 22 in 1661 when he testified in Averill's suit against his father; m. Ann ———, who m. secondly

* *Probate Records of Essex County*, II: 291-296.

Rev. Joshua Moody, Harvard 1653, of Portsmouth and Boston. Shortly before his death he was one of a riotous party at Quartermaster Perkins' tavern in Ipswich on the evening of training day, shooting pistols and creating general disturbance (court, April, 1672). He d. June 16, 1672, in Newbury. Administration was granted to his widow, Ann Jacob, Sept. 24, 1672. It was ordered that the only child should have £100 when of age and that the widow should enjoy the rest of the estate, but, if she married, should provide security for the child's portion. The inventory listed no land but extensive standing crops and the contents of a large house (it would seem that he lived and farmed on his father's land), including many articles of luxury, books, silver, arms and an extensive wardrobe, the total being £356.

Child:

1. *Lydia*; unmarried in 1697 when her step-father, in his will, stated that he had kept her many years.*
2. ii. THOMAS, b. about 1641.
- iii. RICHARD; m. Jan. 15, 1673, Mary Whipple who d. Jan. 27, 1674. During King Philip's war he was active as lieutenant in the company of Capt. Brocklebank who was slain in battle at Sudbury April 21, 1676. On April 22 the Council ordered Jacob to take command of his own company and that of Capt. Wadsworth who had also fallen. He wrote to the Council that same day: "About 500 of the enemy came in sight on Indian Hill and one, as their accustomed manner is after a fight, began to signify to us how many were slain. They cohooped seventy-four times, which we hoped was only to affright us, seeing we have had no intelligence of any such thing, yet we have reason to fear the worst." On Aug. 24, 1676, he was credited with £14:15:10. His death in the following summer was possibly the result of a wound or of illness contracted during the hardships of the campaign.

His will, made June 8, was proved Sept. 26, 1676. To brother Thomas Jacob £30. To brother John Jacob £60. To brother Joseph Jacob £60. To sister Martha Jacob £55 and to sister Judith Jacob £45, all but £10 of each legacy to be paid in household goods. Residue to brother Nathaniel, executor. Overseers: "my two uncle Appletons." Witnesses: Samuel Appleton, John Whipple.† The inventory of £1067 included a farm of 150 acres with housing (£750), his military pay (£13:5:10), clothes (£12). "Goods apriised by itself for the two sisters" (£61:12:5) probably consisted of his more costly possessions.

Child, born in Ipswich:

1. *Mary*, b. Jan. 20, 1674; d. June 20, 1675.
- iv. JOHN; servant of Mr. John Paine in 1663; witnessed an Isles of Shoals deed for Thomas Daniel of Portsmouth, N. H., Oct. 22, 1670; taxed for the Portsmouth minister's support in 1677; had a grant at Falmouth, Me., under President Danforth in 1680. He m. (1) before May, 1680, Jane ———. In King's Chapel yard was her gravestone: Here lyeth buried ye body of Jane late wife of John Jacob aged about ———‡ years departed this life January

* In Short's sexton record, included in the published Vital Records of Newbury, appears "Jacobs ———, wid. Moody, bur. ——— 1803." For either mother or daughter, the date is impossible.

† Essex Probate, No. 14726.

‡ Printed "73 years" in the published epitaphs of King's Chapel, probably a misreading of "33 years." The stone cannot be found (1939).

ye 1 1686/7. He m. (2) Susanna ——— by 1688, and apparently lived in Boston from the time of his first marriage.

The will of John Jacob of Boston, merchant, was made May 12, 1688, "being about to undertake a journey abroade," and proved Jan. 28, 1690. To his wife Susanna he gave "the stuff she brought with her upon marriage with me." To Jane Jacob, his only child, the rest of the estate and she to be educated out of the proceeds of his rents. "Only if my present wife Should have a son by me begotten then I do give unto my child my new child my New Silver Tankard that hath my Coat of Arms engraven thereon." Executor: brother-in-law William Hesee, Junr., in trust until daughter Jane becomes 18 or her day of marriage and then she to be sole executrix. Witnesses: Isaac Addington, Samuel Mason, Mary Mason. William Hersy of Rumny Marsh, husbandman and executor, gave a receipt on Aug. 20, 1691, to Susanna Jacob, the relict, covering goods valued at £52:14:0 as contained in an inventory taken Nov. 10, 1690, by John Baker and Joseph Hiller.*

Children, by first wife, born in Boston:

1. *John*, b. May 12, 1680; d. young.
2. *Jane*, b. Sept. 5, 1681; on Dec. 19, 1695, a minor fourteen years of age and upwards, she appointed her friend Capt. Simon Willard of Salem her guardian;† m. in Salem Nov. 24, 1708, her cousin Josiah Willard.
3. *Mary*, b. Oct. 7, 1684; d. young.

By second wife:

4. *Richard*, b. Sept. 15, 1689, by which it is obvious that his father returned from abroad; d. young.
- v. **NATHANIEL**; an Ipswich commoner in 1678, a voter in town affairs in 1679, a grantee at Falmouth, Me., in 1680, and a freeman at Rowley in 1684.
"Called forth upon an expedition against the Indians," he made his will Nov. 10, 1688, and it was probated Nov. 26, 1689. To his brother Thomas he left £20. To his brother John, £30. To sister Martha Willard, £30. To sister Judith Husey, £20. To cousin John Appleton, £5. "I give to ye standing minister or ministers twenty shillings per year, during ye continuance of such a ministry as is now settled in Ipswich as to Doctrine and form." Executor: brother Joseph.‡ Mr. Simon Willard was appointed administrator *de bonis non* Jan. 20, 1700/1, after Joseph Jacob's death.
- vi. **JUDITH**, b. about 1650; m. William Hasey of Rumney Marsh before Nov. 12, 1675, when she was given a letter from the church at Ipswich to the church in Boston; d. Nov. 17, 1718, aged sixty-eight.
- vii. **MARTHA**; m. about 1679 Capt. Simon Willard who lived in Salem after 1680 and m. there, second, July 25, 1722, Priscilla Buttolph. Willard was mentioned as "brother Willard" in the account in the estate of Joseph Jacob, was administrator *d.b.n.* of Nathaniel Jacob's estate, and guardian of the only child of John Jacob.
3. viii. **JOSEPH**, b. about 1655.

* Suffolk Probate, 8: 18, 51.

† Suffolk Probate, 13: 703.

‡ Essex Probate, 304: 205.

2. THOMAS² JACOB (*Richard*¹) was born in Ipswich about 1641. He was twenty in 1661 when he testified in the Averill case, and about thirty-nine in 1679. On December 21, 1671, he married his first wife, Sarah Browne, who died in Ipswich January 29, 1679. There is no record of his marriage to his second wife, Mary —, who died before him.

Jacob took the Freeman's Oath on March 30, 1675. He served on the Essex grand jury in 1677 and 1681, and was a tything-man in 1679. In 1683 he was an ensign in Capt. Daniel Eppes's company of militia. He was on the jury which tried the last witchcraft cases in January, 1692/3, three victims being convicted out of thirty indicted. He subscribed toward a new and bigger bell for the Ipswich meeting-house in 1699, and was seated "at the Table" in the meeting-house in 1700.

Thomas Jacob made his will December 3, 1706. To his daughter Mary Tilton and son-in-law Abraham Tilton he left twenty acres of land. To his daughter Sarah Jacob, £65. To his daughter Mercy Jacob, £65. To his son-in-law Thomas Brown, fifteen acres of land. Residue to daughters Abigail and Martha, who were to be executrices.*

Children, by first wife, born in Ipswich:

- i. MARY, b. Nov. 7, 1672; m. Dec. 11, 1693, Abraham Tilton. (*See Tilton.*)
- ii. SARAH, b. Sept. 26, 1674; m. Dec. 13, 1713, Moses Chase.

By second wife:

- iii. ABIGAIL, b. April 16, 1682; m. in 1704 Thomas Brown.
- iv. MARTHA, b. April 17, 1684; m., int. April 21, 1708, Samuel Brown.
- v. MERCY, b. May 11, 1686; m., int. April 6, 1713, John Fowler.

3. JOSEPH² JACOB (*Richard*¹) was born about 1655 according to a deposition made in 1672 when he was a servant of Nathaniel Rust, which gave his age as seventeen.† He was twenty-one when he served under Capt. Poole in King Philip's War, for which service he was credited £2:14:10 on August 24, 1676.

He was executor of his brother Nathaniel's estate in 1689.

He mortgaged his Ipswich farm of one hundred and forty acres to his niece Lydia Jacob of Boston May 2, 1693, to secure to her the £100 legacy left her by her grandfather Jacob, and she signed a discharge March 6, 1693/4, in Boston.

On December 18, 1690, he married Susanna Symonds, a

* Essex Probate, 309:177.

† *Records and Files*, V: 190.

granddaughter of the Deputy-Governor. It is probable that she died soon after the birth of her third child about 1695 as she did not survive her husband. He was killed by Indians at Winnegance in September, 1697. His brother Thomas Jacob was granted administration on his estate October 5, 1697, and Col. Samuel Appleton, their kinsman, was appointed guardian of the two surviving children. Among his debts was £5 to his sister Moody (his brother Samuel's widow), £4 to his sister Hasey, £7:13:0 to his brother Willard and £5 additional for boarding his young son, and £4 to Abraham Fitts for taking care of the child (Susanna Jacob), Mrs. Fitts probably being her nurse. An inventory of £452 was entered on October 20, 1697. Col. Appleton rendered his account March 29, 1715, Susanna Jacob having chosen her brother Joseph to succeed him as guardian on the previous March 16.*

Children, born in Ipswich:

- i. SAMUEL, b. Dec. 1, 1691; d. Dec. 13, 1691.
- ii. JOSEPH, b. Mar. 12, 1692/3; m. April 29, 1723, Mary Bartlett of Newbury; d. in Sheffield Dec. 6, 1783, in his 94th year.†
- iii. SUSANNA, m. Philip Fowler, int. June 2, 1716; for £120 they quit-claimed all interest (1/3) in the estate of their honored father Mr. Joseph Jacob to her brother Joseph July 23, 1716.

* Essex Probate, 306: 5, 19; 811: 258.

† For descendants see *The Essex Institute Historical Collections*, vol. LXXVI.

IV
APPLETON, of IPSWICH



APPLETON

Appleton is a local name meaning orchard—an enclosure where apples grow. There are at least ten places named Appleton in various parts of England, and it is highly probable that totally unrelated men took their names from them when surnames first came into common use. The Appletons of Suffolk, from whom the American family descends, may have had their origin in the village of Appleton in Norfolk or in some orchard-surrounded farm long since lost to memory in their own county, and the Appleton families of Lancashire, Yorkshire and Kent may well be of equally indigenous stock.

When a tax or subsidy list for Suffolk was made in 1327, the year in which Edward III was crowned, there were fourteen men and women named Appleton of sufficient property to be included therein, none of them living in Great or Little Waldingfield, the parishes in which our Appleton ancestors are found a century later. Six of them were of the town of Beccles, where Ralph del Appeltone was the largest tax payer, the others being Adam, Robert, Peter, John and Nicholas del Appeltone. Ralph del Appelton was taxed in Ringgesfeld and Beatrice del Apelton in Barsham, both villages very near Beccles, which lies in the northeastern corner of the county. Still in the northeast, at Stradbok, was John del Apeltone. In central Suffolk, near Needham Market, there were Robert del Apeltone of Combes and Agnes del Apeltone of Cretyngge, while south of Ipswich at Chelmyngton was John del Appeltone. At Bury St. Edmunds, in west Suffolk and some fifteen miles north of the Waldingfields, lived still another John del Apelton.

Records of the Appletons of Waldingfield begin in 1416, and their pedigree is reasonably certain for the two and a half centuries embraced in their residence in the parish of Little Waldingfield. This account of the Appletons is based primarily on a pedigree which is included in Harleian ms. 1196 at folio 167a, preserved in the British Museum, and which appears to have been written in the early seventeenth century. This pedigree, which has been printed in *Memorial of Samuel Appleton*, by Isaac Appleton Jewett, has been checked, amended and amplified by documentary material printed in *The Visitation of Suffolk*, by Joseph Jackson Howard, *The Manors of Suffolk*, by W. A. Copinger, *Suffolk Manorial Families*, by J. J. Muskett, and other record evidence. The gravestone inscriptions are

from Weever's *Antient Funeral Monuments*, and they have been translated from the Latin. Weever credits them to the church at Great Waldingfield, but except for the stone of the first John Appleton who died in 1416, they were undoubtedly in the church of Little Waldingfield. The wills, printed *verbatim et literatim* by Muskett, are abstracted in modern American spelling.

The arms and crest of the Appletons of Little Waldingfield were entered in the visitation of Suffolk of 1577: *Argent*, a fesse *sable* between three apples *gules*, stalked and leaved *vert*; Crest, an elephant's head *sable*, eared and tusked *or*, wreathed round the trunk a snake entering the mouth *vert*. Apples are an obvious choice as a charge, but the crest must have been the work of a vigorous imagination. These arms were borne as early as 1526 when they were placed upon the tomb of Robert Appleton, quartered with the arms of Crane and impaling the arms of Mountney. According to Weever, whose accuracy I am again inclined to doubt, they appeared on the tomb of John Appleton of Great Waldingfield in 1416. If the coat had so early an origin, it is curious that the shield blazoned with Spring impaling Appleton at Rushbrook, co. Suffolk, presumably representing the union of Thomas Spring and Margaret Appleton about 1464, should carry the bear coat of the Appletons of Lancashire rather than the Little Waldingfield apples.

1. JOHN¹ APPLETON of Great Waldingfield, co. Suffolk, was buried in the parish church and a stone to his memory was formerly there bearing an inscription in Latin stating that John Appulton of Waldingfield Magna died in the fourteenth year of the reign of Henry IV, 1416. He was probably the father of

2. JOHN² APPLETON (?John¹), possibly born about 1380. On April 6, 1437, John Appulton granted to John Appulton, his son, and Margaret, his son's wife, a tenement with a garden and certain land in Little Waldingfield, co. Suffolk.*

Children:

3. i. JOHN, b. about 1412.
- ii. "THOMAS, second son, 6 Edward IV (1465)."

* Bodleian Library, Suffolk Charters, 440.

3. JOHN³ APPLETON (*John*,² ?*John*¹), of Little Waldingfield, if he was of age in 1433, was born about 1412. He is said to have married Margaret Welling, presumably a daughter of Robert Welling of Lavenham, co. Suffolk. There was formerly a stone in the church at Little Waldingfield on which was inscribed in Latin a request to pray for the souls of John Appulton and Margaret his wife, which John died on April 9, A.D. 1481, and Margaret in July, 1468.

On March 14, 1433, William Ryngefeld of Little Waldingfield granted to John Apilton, jr., and others the lands and tenements in Great and Little Waldingfield called Holbrokes.* This was the manor of Holbrook Hall which remained the home of the Appleton family for two centuries. Robert Wellyng of Lavenham leased to John Appulton and others a tenement called Smythis with a garden and two crofts of land in Great Waldingfield on May 8, 20 Henry VI (1442).†

Possibly the year of his death on his tomb stone has been incorrectly transcribed, for there is a lease of the year 1483 by Alexander Cressener, Richard Rysing and John Appulton, sr., of Great Waldingfield, to Thomas Appulton, Margaret, his wife, and others of two closes in Great Waldingfield.‡

Children :

- i. JOHN. According to the Harleian ms. pedigree he was the eldest son and heir, had two wives, Elizabeth and Alice, a son John who d. *s.p.* and three daughters. The other printed authorities do not mention him, unless he was the John Appleton, senior, of the lease of 1483, mentioned above.
4. ii. THOMAS, b. about 1442.
- iii. MARGARET; m. Thomas Spring of Lavenham, co. Suffolk, a wealthy clothier, who is credited with building the vestry of Lavenham church. In his will, dated March 29, 1486, and proved Sept. 12, 1486, he left three hundred marks toward the building of the church tower, and names his wife Margaret and son Thomas Spring executors. This younger Thomas Spring was "the rich clothier of Lavenham," whose widow was in 1524 the wealthiest person in Suffolk, after the Duke of Norfolk. From Thomas and Margaret Spring descend the Spring family of knights and baronets, of Pakenham. In Rushbrook church, co. Suffolk, the Spring arms impaled with the arms of Appleton (of co. Lancaster), *argent*, a bear salient *sable*, crowned *or*, were found on an old altar tomb in 1816. This may indicate that the Appletons of Suffolk had not assumed their own coat in 1486 and that for the purposes of the tomb an obliging antiquary supplied the Springs with the blazon of the Appletons of Lancaster.§

* Bodleian Library, Suffolk Charters, 436.

† Bodleian Library, Suffolk Charters, 44.

‡ Bodleian Library, Suffolk Charters, 473.

§ *The Visitation of Suffolk*, Howard, I: 190; *The Springs of Lavenham*, by Barbara McClenaghan, 1924.

4. THOMAS⁴ APPLETON (*John*,³ *John*,² ?*John*¹), of Holbrook Hall, Little Waldingfield, was born about the year 1442. He married Margery Crane, daughter of Robert Crane of Stonham, co. Suffolk. She died November 4, 1504, and he on October 4, 1507, according to the inscription formerly on a stone in Little Waldingfield church, asking the reader to pray for their souls.

Appleton owned lands in Edwardstone, co. Suffolk, where he confirmed by deed to John Smith and others two messuages and the adjoining crofts on October 1, 1497, while on May 20, 1500, he leased to John Colman and others certain lands in Edwardstone and Great Waldingfield.*

The Crane family of Little Stonham and Chilton, co. Suffolk, entered a pedigree in the visitation of Suffolk of 1561, but the Appleton-Crane marriage does not appear in it. In another pedigree, the origin of which is not given, presented by Howard,† Margery Crane is placed as only daughter and eventual heiress of Robert Crane by his wife Anne (Ogard), Lady Arundel. By the will of her husband, Thomas Appleton, however, we know that Margery had a sister, the Abbess of Bruisyard, and in this pedigree "Elizabeth, 3 dau., a nun at Brusyard" is placed as daughter of a senior Robert Crane, the father of the man who married Lady Arundel. That Margery (Crane) Appleton was in fact the daughter of the senior Robert Crane and sister of the younger Robert is fully proved by the latter's will of August 4, 1500, in which he leaves "to my suster Appulton my Releqwikis aboute my nek," which must have been holy objects in a little case, and appoints "my brother Thomas Appulton gentleman" executor.‡ The inquest on the estate of the younger Robert Crane, taken in 1501, states that "he died without heir of his body begotten," and in her will of 1508 his widow, Anne, Lady Arundell, names Arundell children but no Crane children. Finally, the inquest shows that Robert Crane and Lady Arundell were not married until 1477, when Margery Crane must long have been Thomas Appleton's wife.§ The Cranes of Little Stonham and Chilton bore *Argent*,

* Bodleian Library. Suffolk Charters. 301, 302.

† *The Visitation of Suffolk*. Howard, I: 163.

‡ Prerogative Court of Canterbury, Sede Vacante, Register F., fo. 118.

§ *The Cranes of Chilton*, William Sumner Appleton, Cambridge, 1868, p. 42; *Inquisitiones Post Mortem, Henry VII*, H. M. Stationery Office, No. 429. Mr. Appleton, finding neither the will nor the inquest of the younger Robert Crane, accepted the various manuscript pedigrees which made Anne (Ogard) Lady Arundell his ancestress. In 1868 genealogical material was not so easily available as it is today, nor had the errors, fabrications and inconsistencies of early pedigree makers been so thoroughly exposed to the light of record evidence. His account of the early genera-

a fesse between three crosses crosslet fitchée *gules*.

Thomas Appleton was one of the executors of the will of John Clopton of Melford, co. Suffolk, in 1494. Clopton and Robert Crane, Appleton's brother-in-law, had married sisters, daughters of the family of Darcy of Maldon, co. Essex, Crane's Darcy wife being a predecessor of Anne, Lady Arundell. Clopton gave a ring with a great turquoise to "my brodre Crane" and "anodre hope of gold with Seynt Johannes hed graved therein" to Thomas Appleton.

Thomas Appullton of Little Waldyngfeld in the diocese of Norwich made his will on January 20, 1504/5. He directed that he be buried in the church of St. Lawrence in Waldyngfeld, near his wife, and that a priest should sing for four years for him, his father and mother, his wife, his kinsfolk and his benefactors. To the church he gave a vestment "of such color and price as shall be thought metely and convenient." To the nuns of Malling, £4 in four years for masses to be said on the day of his obit. To Dame Anne, his daughter (a nun), 13s. 4d. yearly out of the lands and tenements in Kersey, Grotton and other towns which he had given to his son William Appulton. To his son Gilbert Appulton, seven horses with the plow and cart and all the harness thereunto belonging, eight kine, a mass book with a challis, altar cloths and vestments. To his son the parson of Laneham (Lavenham), his gilt cup with the covering and his best salt. To Robert Appulton, his other salt of silver. To his son William Appulton, his flat piece of silver and the covering to the same. To Robert Appulton, three goblets of silver and a standing mazer. His napery, bedding and all other household stuff were to be divided between his son Robert and his (Robert's) brother Richard. Whoever had his manor of Holbrook should have his farm of Branston Hall for "myn yers" (that is, the remaining years of his leasehold). William Appulton was to have the plate and jewels which he had given to his mother, that is, a ducat of gold of the value of 46s., a ring of ducat gold after the fashion of a hoop, a flat piece of silver whereof the brim be gilt, a maser "that I drynk of daiely" and a new long carpet that he sent his mother. "And thies ben the Jewells that I and his moder geve him"—a ring with a blue stone that the Abbess of Brassyard (Bruisyard) her sister gave her at the time of her decease, and half a dozen silver spoons

fions of the Crane family and their descent from the Butlers, Carbonells, etc., while possibly basically true, should be made the subject of further investigation in the public records before it is regarded as fact.

with great gilt knobs on the end of every spoon that he did make for his mother. The residue to his executors, toward the mending of the highway leading from his manor of Holbrook to the well. Executors: his sister Margaret Spryng, his son Thomas Appulton, parson of Laneham, and his son William Appulton. Supervisor: his nephew Thomas Spryng, to whom, for a remembrance, a signet of gold graven with St. John's head.* Proved February 9, 1508.†

According to the *inquisitio post mortem* taken on his estate in 23 Henry VII (1508), his manors of Holbrook and Brans-ton Hall and other lands passed to his son Robert Appleton, aged 30, an under estimate.

Children:

- i. ROBERT, b. in 1470; m. Mary Mountney, daughter of Thomas Mountney of Mountnessing, co. Essex, who m. secondly Roger Martin, Esq., of Melford, co. Suffolk, who, in his will of 1535 desired to be buried beside her in Melford church. Robert Appleton, gentleman, of Waldingfield Parva was taxed £3; 6; 8 in the Suffolk Subsidy of 1524. In Little Waldingfield church there was a gravestone asking the reader to pray for the souls of Robert Appulton and Marie his wife, which Robert died August 27, 1526. The stone contained brasses of both Robert and Mary Appleton, hers being reproduced in *The Memorial of Samuel Appleton*, and an armorial brass of Appleton quartering Crane and impaling Mountney, *Azure*, a bend between six martlets *or*. For the Appletons to quarter the arms of Crane was, according to the rules which were already taking form at that period, improper heraldry, inasmuch as Margery Crane, Robert Appleton's mother, was not an heiress. Her brother John Crane, who inherited Little Stonham and Chilton from their brother Robert, was the ancestor of a lengthy line.
The Appleton pedigree gives Robert and Mary Appleton two sons, William and Edward, and traces the descent of the Appletons of Holbrook Hall through William. Robert Appleton did not leave a will and no *inquisitio post mortem* has thus far been found. His next younger brother, William Appleton, did leave a will and by it he is proved to have been the father of two sons, William and Edward. It seems most likely that Robert Appleton died *s.p.m.*, and that his heir was William Appleton, son of his brother William, the London draper.‡ It is particularly pertinent that Roger Martin, second husband of Mary (Mountney) Appleton, does not mention any Appleton sons of his wife in his very long and highly genealogical will.
- ii. ANNE; a nun, mentioned in the will of her father in 1504 and in that of her brother William in 1512.
5. iii. WILLIAM.
- iv. RICHARD. For him his brother William bought the manor of Hunston Hall in Hunston, co. Suffolk, in 1509, conveying it to feoffees

* This was, of course, the ring bequeathed to Thomas Appleton by John Clopton in 1494.

† Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 11 Bennett.

‡ This was first pointed out as a probability by Mr. J. J. Muskett.

and appointing John Coket of Ampton to receive seisin on Jan. 18, 1509. From Richard Appleton the manor passed to

1. *Elizabeth*, his daughter, who m. Henry Ryckes, who with her conveyed the manor to Robert Ashfield.*
- v. THOMAS; parson of Lavenham, co. Suffolk, in 1500 and 1504.
- vi. GILBERT; named in his father's will in 1504; probably married and left descendants of the yeoman class. In Lavenham between 1561 and 1588 a John Appleton had eight children baptized, including a Gilbert.

5. WILLIAM⁵ APPLETON (*Thomas*,⁴ *John*,³ *John*,² ?*John*¹) was probably born in the family home at Holbrook Hall, Little Waldingfield, about 1474. He was apprenticed in 1490 to George Bulstrode of London, draper, was made free of the Drapers' Company in 1497 and was a liveryman of the company in 1504. He must have learned the goldsmith's trade, however, for before 1504/5 when he was a young man, he had made and given to his mother, to whom he was devoted, "half a doseyn of silver sponys with grete gilte knoppes on the ende of every spone" as his father fondly states in his will. He was, however, a draper when he made his own will. He married Elizabeth —, who survived him.

The will of William Appulton, citizen and draper of London, was made July 20, 1512, and proved April 30, 1513. He directed that his estate be divided into three equal parts, one to go to his wife Elizabeth according to the custom of the city of London, the second to be devoted to the performance of his legacies and the third to be divided between his sons William Appulton and Edward Appulton and the unborn child his wife was then carrying. To the high altar of Allhallows Barking in Tower Street, London, 3s.4d. To the work of the body of the church at Little Waldingfield, 40s., an honest priest to pray for his soul for three years. "My brother Richard Appulton hath delivered me in gage all his evidences concerning Honston Hall the which my cousin Edward Stubbes hath in keeping. I constitute William Strode, merchant, my cousin Edward Stubbes, gentleman, and William Roche of London, draper, my executors to see the premises truly executed." To his wife, his lands in the parish of St. Mary Axe, London, for life and likewise all his lands and tenements that he had of the gift of his father in Kersey, Grotton, Hadley, Semer and Whatfield in the county of Suffolk, until his son William should come to the age of twenty-one years, when William and the heirs of his

* Stowe Charters, 245; Suffolk Fines, Trinity, 36 Henry VIII.

body should have the lands forevermore. His sister, Dame Anne Appulton, was to have 13s. 4d. out of the lands yearly in accordance with his father's will. In default of issue to William, a remainder to his son Edward, and in default of issue to Edward, a remainder to the unborn child. If all of his children should die without heirs, the lands should wholly remain to his brother Richard Appulton.*

Children:

6. i. WILLIAM, b. about 1510.
- ii. EDWARD, b. about 1511; m. Alice Rokewood, daughter of Firmin Rokewood of Euston, co. Suffolk, who m. secondly in 1581 Edmund Waldegrave of Hitcham, co. Suffolk; d. *s.p.* in 1580. He was presumably the Edward Appleton who was apprenticed to Thomas Perpoint of the Drapers' Company, London, in 1529. He lived in Edwardston, co. Suffolk, where he, gentleman, was taxed on £20 in lands in the subsidy of 1568.
Edward Appleton of Edwardston, gentleman, made his will Aug. 31, and it was proved Nov. 10, 1580. He left to Mr. Doctor Crooke 20s., to Mr. Knowstubbess 20s., to Mr. Feilde of London, preacher, 40s., to Mr. Welche £5, and to Mr. Sandes of Boxford, £5. To his wife Alice, the residue of all his goods, plate, jewells, money, corn, and cattle, and all his messuages, houses, lands, woods, farms and possessions in Edwardstone, Little Waldingford, Much Waldingford and Groton for life, and after her death to his nephew Thomas Appleton, gentleman, and his heirs forever, he to pay to his daughter Marie Appleton £100 on the day of her marriage. By a deed of Aug. 28, 1580, he had enfeoffed Thomas Gale, Henry Browne and others in a messuage and six parcels of land called Hockers on the hill in Edwardstone, to the use of himself and his wife for life, and then to the use of the feoffees, to pay to the church wardens of Little Waldingfield 40s., of Great Waldingfield 40s. and of Edwardstone 20s. annually for the use of the poor. He makes careful provision for the perpetuation of this charity. Executrix: his wife Alice. Supervisors: William Clopton of Groton, Esq., and his nephew Thomas Appleton.†
- iii. CHILD, unborn in 1512.

6. WILLIAM⁶ APPLETON (?William,⁵ Thomas,⁴ John,³ John,² ?John¹) was born about 1510, presumably in London. If our thesis is correct, he succeeded his uncle, Robert Appleton, in the family estates in Suffolk in 1526. He married, about 1530, Rose Sexton, daughter of Robert Sexton of Lavenham, co. Suffolk. He died August 24, 28 Henry VIII (1538), the date given in the *inquisitio post mortem* taken on his estate, but, from the date of his will, September 20, 1538, obviously wrong. His widow, Rose Appleton, married as her second husband Robert Gurdon of Assington, co. Suffolk, and became the com-

* Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 21 Fetiplace.

† Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 41 Arundell.

mon ancestress of the New England families of Appleton and Saltonstall. In his will made April 3, 1578, Robert Gurdon left 20 marks to his daughter Appleton (Mary, wife of Thomas Appleton) for the use of her son Isaac Appleton, who was then a baby of three years.* Rose (Sexton) (Appleton) Gurdon survived her husband and lived in the Gurdon parish of Assington.

The Sextons, like the Springs, were prosperous clothiers of Lavenham. Rose (Sexton) Appleton was one of the six daughters of Robert Sexton by his second wife Agnes Jermyn, whose family, seated at Rushbrook, had long been of the Suffolk squirearchy. This marriage seems to have been advantageous for the Sextons as all of the girls, their one brother and two half-sisters married into the gentry class. Thomas Jermyn of Rushbrook, Agnes Sexton's father, made his will in two parts in January, 1496/7, and in July, 1503, and it was proved in November, 1504.† Although Agnes Sexton is once called "my suster" in this document, that is an error either of reading or writing as, in making Robert Sexton and Agnes Sexton two of his six executors, he calls her his daughter and Agnes's own will, naming her brothers, fully identifies her. The Jermyns of Rushbrook in later centuries produced three peerage lines, the Earls of St. Albans, the Lords Jermyn and the Lords Dover, and Jermyn street in London, the haunt of the fashionable Victorian and Edwardian bachelor, was named for them.‡

Robert Sexton, Rose Appleton's father, was a son of Aleyn Sexton of Lavenham, clothier, whose will was made December 26, 1487, and proved February 8, 1487(8). It mentions his wife Rose, his son and daughter-in-law Robert and Maryon Sexton, and the children of Thomas Sexton and of Rose Barbor, the size of the legacies to the children seeming to indicate that they were Aleyn's grandchildren although they are not specifically called so.§ Robert Sexton's first wife, Marion, who was living in 1487, is said to have been a daughter of Thomas Spring of Lavenham but is called Cecily in the pedigrees.|| As Thomas Spring's will of March 29, 1486, mentions only one daughter, Marion, and is practically coincident with the will of Aleyn Sexton of 1487, it seems safe to say that Robert's

* Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 19 Bakon.

† Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 39 Holgrave.

‡ See the well-documented history of the Jermyns of Rushbrook in *Rushbrook Parish Registers*, Woodbridge, 1903.

§ Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 7 Milles.

|| *The Visitation of Suffolk*, J. J. Howard, London, 1866, I: 201, and *Suffolk Manorial Families*, J. J. Muskett, I: 289.

wife was Marian Spring. Robert Sexton's own will, made February 25, 1517, includes among the legatees "his sister Thomas Barbour's wife," his own wife Agnes, the children of two daughters by his first wife, one son, Thomas Sexton, and "every of the vi daughters" which he had by his wife Agnes.* Fortunately Agnes (Jermyn) Sexton, in her will of July 20, 1520, names the six girls—Alice, Margaret, Rose, Mary, Agnes and Bridget Sexton—and puts the finishing touch to her identification as a Jermyn by making her brother Thomas Jermen her executor, leaving 40s. each to her brothers and sister Robert, Francis and Mary and 5 marks to her nephew and godson Ambrose Jermyn.†

The arms of the Sextons of Lavenham were: *Argent*, three sinister wings, *gules*. The Jermyns of Rushbrook bore *sable*, a crescent between two mullets in pale, *argent*.

In his will, made September 20, 1538, and proved May 2, 1539, William Appleton of Little Waldingfield, gentleman, directed that he be buried in his parish church, and that on the day of his burying there be a dirge and mass sung for him and certain money distributed amongst the priests, clerks and poor people "as it may stand with the King's laws." To his wife Rose, the lease of the manor of Branston Hall in "Mykill Waldingfelde." To his brother Edward Appulton, all of his apparell. He stood bound to Mr. Perpoynte of London for the payment of twenty marks for his said brother Edward Appulton. The residue of his goods to his wife and executrix, "instantly requiring said wife to be good to Frances my daughter during her nonage."‡

Children:

- i. FRANCES; m. in 1566 William Littlebury of Dedham, co. Essex, and d. *s.p.* before July 20, 1571, when her husband made his will, mentioning his late wife's brother, Thomas Appleton.
7. ii. THOMAS, b. about 1538.

7. THOMAS⁷ APPLETON (*William*,⁶ ?*William*,⁵ *Thomas*,⁴ *John*,³ *John*,² ?*John*¹) was born about 1538, presumably at Little Waldingfield. He was about five years old in 1543/4 when the *inquisitio post mortem* was taken on his father's estate. He married about 1568 Mary Isaac, daughter and co-heiress of Edward Isaac of Well Court, Ickham, co. Kent. He

* Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 6 Ayloff.

† Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 31 Ayloff.

‡ Archdeaconry of Sudbury, 301b Longe.

was his father's heir and also inherited from his uncle Edward Appleton.

Appleton owned the manor of Lynnes *alias* Algooods in Edwardstone, and by 1598 he had bought the manor of Caleys in Glensford, co. Suffolk, from John Allen, his son Isaac levying a fine against it in that year.*

In the visitation of Suffolk taken by Richard Cooke, Clarenceux, dated 1577, Thomas Appleton entered the family arms and crest and a very short pedigree, listing only his parents William Appleton and Rose Sexton, himself and his wife Mary Isaac and their two children, Mary and Judith.†

Thomas Appleton, Esq., of Little Waldingfield, was named executor of the will of Henry Crane, Esq., of Chilton on June 20, 1586, as "my cosin," executor of the will of Robert Crane, Esq., of Chilton on October 7, 1590, and as Thomas Appleton of Assington, the home of his step-father Gurdon, he was a witness to the will of Francis Clopton of Melford in 1559.

The will of Thomas Appleton, esquire, was made March 1, 1603, and proved May 16, 1603. He appointed his wife Mary his executrix and bequeathed to her all his goods and chattels, "knowing that she will have as great a care of my children as I have." Also to his wife he left all of his lands and tenements except those otherwise specified. To his son John, the manor of Caple after his wife's death. To his daughter Judith, his farm at Glensforde in Suffolk called the Courte and the lands in the occupation of Osborne, immediately after his death. To his sons Thomas and Samuel, £100 each when they shall come out of their apprenticeship. To Mr. Robert Welch of Waldingfield, £10. "I will that my son and heir and his heirs shall pay and satisfy to the poor people inhabiting Little Waldingfield ten loads of wood every year and to their successors for ever." This will was read to the testator by John Wincoll in the presence of Thomas Colman, Anne Colman and John Woolnowe.‡

In 1604 Mary Appleton and her son Sir Isaac were in legal difficulties the exact nature of which has not been investigated. They, Mary Appleton, widow, of Littlewaldingfield, co. Suffolk, & Isaac Appleton of Etherston, co. Suffolk, Kt., had been sued in Chancery by one Thomas Gwyne. Losing the case and being in contempt of court by failing to obey the decree, Mary Appleton was imprisoned in the Fleet and Sir Isaac went into

* Suffolk Fines, Easter, 40 Elizabeth.

† *Visitations of Suffolk*, Walter C. Metcalfe, F. S. A., p. 85.

‡ Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 32 Bolein.

hiding. On December 18, 1604, they had a change of heart, gave recognizances to obey the decree and "Mary is to be enlarged of her imprisonment out of the Fleet where she remaineth" and "Sir Isaac is also discharged from the pursuivant which should apprehend him."*

Mary Appleton lived in the parish of Saint Bridget's in London at the time of her death. About the 18th of February, 1612, "being moved to make her will in the time of the sickness whereof she died," she said that she would give everything to her son Samuel Appleton, except two gowns and other apparell which were to go to her two daughters. Mrs. Lewes, Elizabeth Cheape and others were present when she made this nuncupative will, which was proved and administration granted to her son Samuel on June 11, 1613.†

Children:

- i. JUDITH, b. about 1570; d. in infancy.
- ii. MARY, b. about 1572; m. in 1589 Robert Ryece of Preston, co. Suffolk; d. *s.p.* before 1637. She was mentioned in the will of her great-uncle Edward Appleton in 1580. Robert Ryece, educated in Geneva, Switzerland, was a distinguished Suffolk antiquary.
Robert Ryece of Preston, gentleman, made his will Feb. 7, 1637, and, after mentioning various relatives of his own, gave "unto my Nephew John Appleton the second son of my loving Brother in Law John Appleton, late of Chilton in the County of Suffolk, deceased, my Latin bossed Bible of Tunelius in folio"; also lands and tenements anciently called Bertons, Salmons, Spurts and Little Spurts, lying in Preston, Brettenham, Thorpe or Kettlebaston, co. Suffolk; also lands and tenements holden of the manor of Brettenham Hall, co. Suffolk. To his niece Sarah Allen, widow, certain lands with the direction that she was to convey them "unto my loving Brother in Law Samuel Appleton now dwelling at Ipswich in New England."‡
- iii. JUDITH, bapt. Oct. 10, 1574, at Little Waldingfield; m. (1) ——— Allen; m. (2) Lewis Bayley, Bishop of Bangor.

Bayley was an able churchman and an exceptional preacher. Apparently he began his career as vicar of Eversham, co. Worcester, but in 1605 he was rector of Llanedy, co. Carmarthen, and in 1607 vicar of Weaversham, co. Chester. By 1610 he had come to London where he was treasurer of St. Paul's Cathedral, which post he held until 1616. In 1611 he received the degree of B. D. at Exeter College, Oxford, followed by a D. D. in 1613. He was rector of St. Matthew's, Friday street, London, from 1612 to 1616, was named a canon of Litchfield Cathedral in 1614 and in 1615 was admitted to Lincoln's Inn. Early in his career he had been chaplain to Prince Henry, son of King James I, and later became chaplain to the king himself, who is said to have rebuked him sharply on one occasion. In 1616 he was consecrated Bishop of Bangor at Lambeth Palace. He must

* Close Roll, 2 James I. part 32.

† Prerogative Court of Canterbury. 62 Capell.

‡ Prerogative Court of Canterbury. 36 Harvey.

- have been a notorious pluralist for at one period after his elevation to the bishopric he held six livings. He died Oct. 26, 1631.
- iv. SIR ISAAC, b. about 1576; m. Mary Cage "the unfortunate daughter of Anthony Cage of Longstow, co. Cambridge, Esq., sister of Sir John Cage," who married secondly Lawrence Butler of Great Grandsdon, co. Hunts.; d. in 1608 or 1609; "Mary, Lady Appleton and wife to Mr. Lawrence Butler" was buried at Little Waldingfield June 14, 1615.

Isaac Appleton was knighted at Whitehall on July 23, 1603, before the coronation of King James I. He and Richard Saltonstall were among over four hundred Englishmen who then received this honor, many of them much against their wills, because the fees were a welcome addition to a depleted royal purse.

Sir Isaac Appleton of Little Waldingfield, Knight, made his will Sept. 8, 1608, desiring to be buried among his ancestors in the church of Little Waldingfield. To his mother and sole executrix, Mistress Mary Appleton, he left his messuage called Willingham in Glemsford, purchased by his late father; also, for life, the rest of his lands in Suffolk, except such as were already assured to his wife Mary Appleton for her jointure, for the bringing up of his four children. Nevertheless, if his wife should desire to have the education of his children as a mother to them, then his mother should allow her £20 a year for the eldest son "if he be not taken warder," and for each of the other children twenty marks a year. To his younger son John Appleton, the messuage at Glemsford and three other tenements, after the death of his (the testator's) mother. To his daughters Mary and Dorothy equally, the copyhold lands of Glemsford, after the death of his mother. If his mother should die before his eldest son came of age, the rents of those lands were to go to his brother-in-law John Cage, Esq., for maintaining the children. To his brother John Appleton, all right which he might have in the manor of Capell, which his late father devised to John, commonly called Chartford Hall. To his son Isaac Appleton, four tenements in the churchyard of Little Waldingfield, erected and applied by his late father to charitable uses, to continue the same by placing in them from time to time poor men or widows. Six loads of wood were to be distributed annually between the four houses. To his wife Mary Appleton, all his plate except what had been formerly given to his children and one long silver bowl given to his mother. To the poor of Little Waldingfield, £5. Residue to his mother. Witnesses: Robert Ryece, Thomas Lovell, Richard Hall. Proved July 12, 1609.*

The family of Sir Isaac presents puzzling features. Why was his wife "unfortunate" and why, at the time of his death, was he dubious about her care of the children, placing his reliance on his mother? In his will he specifically states that he had four children, naming them—Isaac, John, Mary and Dorothy—so Frances Appleton who married Jacob Preston of Beeston, co. Norfolk, became the ancestress of a line of baronets, and is stated in contemporary pedigrees to have been his daughter and co-heiress must have been posthumous. A portrait of Sir Isaac descended to her heirs. In 1642 Sir Robert Crane, Bart., left £50 apiece to Dorothy Appleton and Frances Appleton, but this Frances Appleton was probably Frances (Crane), widow of Sir Isaac's brother John Appleton.

* Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 70 Dorset.

Children:

1. *Isaac*; m. after 1642 Lady (Susan) Crane, widow of Sir Robert Crane, Bart., of Chilton, co. Suffolk, and daughter of Sir Giles Alington of Horseheath, knight, by his wife Lady Dorothy Cecil, daughter of the Earl of Exeter. Sir Robert, M.P. for Sudbury, d. in London Feb. 17, 1642, aged 55, and named Isaac Appleton an executor of his will and left him £20 to buy a gelding. The Appleton-Crane marriage is proved by an indenture of settlement on the intended marriage of Sir Ralph Hare, Bart., with Mary, eldest daughter of Sir Robert Crane, deceased, between Sir Ralph Hare on the one part and Isaac Appleton, Esq., and Dame Susan Crane, widow of Sir Robert Crane and now wife of the said Isaac Appleton, on the other part, on Dec. 20, 1647.* Lady (Susan) Crane was buried at Chilton Sept. 14, 1681. Isaac Appleton was a Justice of the Peace for Suffolk in 1641.
 2. *John*.
 3. *Mary*.
 4. *Dorothy*.
 5. *Frances*, b. in 1610; m. by 1639 Jacob Preston of Beeston St. Laurence, co. Norfolk, J. P.; d. March 20, 1673, aged 63.†
- v. **SARAH**, bapt. in 1580, "4th daughter"; m. (1) Edward Bird of Walden, co. Essex; m. (2) Rev. Henry Smythe, Master of Magdalen College, Cambridge.
- vi. **JOHN**, bapt. in 1582, "2nd son"; m. (1) a wife who d. *s.p.*; m. (2) about 1618 Frances Crane of Chilton. According to the pedigree signed by his son, he lived at Chilton Hall, and in his will, made Jan. 8, 1622, and proved May 17, 1631, he calls himself "of Chilton." At his death he owned the manor of Chatford Hall in Capell, devised to him by his father, and in an *inquisitio post mortem*, taken in 1634, his son Robert, aged 14, was found to be his heir.

In his description of the church at Chilton, Robert Ryece, the Suffolk antiquary, says: "There in the Isle lyeth burried John Appleton gent. second brother of S^r Isaac Appleton of Holbrocke Hall in Little Waldingfield And Isaac Appleton the Eldest son of Robert Appleton, Esq., of Chilton Hall unfortunately tenant there to John Lord Belasys."‡

Children:

1. *Robert*, b. in 1620; licensed on April 27, 1649, as Robert Appleton of Gray's Inn, Esq., bachelor, 28, to marry Mrs. Martha Moore, about 17, who was a daughter and co-heiress of Thomas Moore, gentleman, of St. Jermyns, co. Norfolk; m. (2) Bridget (Bull) Alabaster, widow of John Alabaster of Hadleigh. He was a barrister-at-law and lived at Preston, co. Suffolk, probably on the Ryece estate inherited from his brother John. By his first wife he had a daughter Martha, and by his second wife a son Isaac and two daughters, Bridget and Anne. Under the title Apple-

* *The Visitation of Suffolk*, 1561, Howard, I: 160.

† *The Visitation of Norfolk*, 1664, Norfolk Record Society (1934), p. 173.

‡ Ryece ms., College of Arms.

ton of Preston, he entered and signed a pedigree in the visitation of Suffolk of 1664-1668,* naming his grandparents Thomas Appleton and Mary Isaac, his parents John Appleton and Frances Crane, his own wives and children.

2. *John*; the highly favored legatee of his uncle-in-law Robert Ryece of Preston.

vii. THOMAS; a legatee in his father's will; d. *s.p.* after 1603.

8. viii. SAMUEL, bapt. Aug. 13, 1586, at Little Waldingfield.

8. SAMUEL⁸ APPLETON (*Thomas*,⁷ *William*,⁶ ?*William*,⁵ *Thomas*,⁴ *John*,³ *John*,² ?*John*¹) was baptized in Little Waldingfield Aug. 13, 1586. He was apprenticed to Samuel Doughty of the Drapers' Company, London, on July 16, 1604. He married Judith Everard on January 24, 1615/6, at Preston, co. Suffolk, the home of his sister Mary Ryece. His brother, Sir Isaac, had died and Lady Appleton had remarried, and it is probable that Samuel Appleton and his bride went to live in the family home, Holbrook Hall, in Little Waldingfield, where their first five children were baptized.

Judith (Everard) Appleton was a daughter of John Everard, a London goldsmith, who was born about 1545 and married about 1574 Judith Borne, daughter of John Borne. His father, Thomas Everard, came of a younger branch of the Everards of Great Waltham, co. Essex, and greatly advanced himself by marrying Margaret Wiseman, daughter of John Wiseman of Great Canfield, co. Essex, who was auditor of the exchequer to King Henry VIII and some of whose lands at Great Canfield young John Everard inherited. Judith (Borne) Everard, widow of John Everard "late citizen and goldsmith of London," made her will in 1598, mentioning Judith among her five unmarried daughters. The Everards bore *Argent*, a fess wavy between three estoiles *gules*.† The identity of Judith (Everard) Appleton with Judith, daughter of John Everard, is strongly evidenced by the fact that Samuel and Judith Appleton possessed lands at Great Canfield. The ancestry of both the Everard and Wiseman families has been traced back many generations, but could be strengthened by further documentation which doubtless can be had.

After 1625 the Appletons lived in some other parish, not yet identified, possibly Groton or Combs or Milden or Monks

* Harleian Society, 61: 167.

† See *The Founding of New England*, Ernest Flagg, 1926, which contains, beginning on p. 391, an article on the Everards by the late J. Gardner Bartlett. The ancestry of Judith (Everard) Appleton would undoubtedly repay further concentrated attention.

Eleigh, in each of which Samuel Appleton held land. Through a combination of Puritan inclination and economic pressure, Appleton, like his kinsman Saltonstall and many of his Suffolk and Essex neighbors, became interested in emigration to New England, and from a reference in one of Governor Winthrop's letters it seems probable that he had intended to cross the Atlantic in the great fleet of 1630. Writing from New England to his son John, who was still at Groton, co. Suffolk, Winthrop says: "For Mr. Appleton take no money of him. He can have no cows; there came not on shore one half of them." It was the late winter of 1636, however, before Appleton left England with his family.

In 1635 Samuel Appleton, gentleman, and Judith, his wife, sold to Richard Gildersleeve and John Borcham certain lands in Groton and Combs for £60. In the Easter term of 1636 the Appletons with Richard Turner and Joanna, his wife, sold a messuage and seventy acres of land in Milden and Monks Eleigh to William Barwick, clerk, and Daniel Cage. In January, 1635/6, a fine was levied between Richard Pepys and Samuel Browne, deforciant, and Samuel Appleton and Judith, his wife, deforciant, of lands in Great Canfield, co. Essex. This latter document disposed of Judith Appleton's rights in the estate of her grandmother Everard, who was born a Wiseman of Great Canfield, and all the sales were in preparation for the family's departure.

By May 25, 1636, when he took the Freeman's Oath, the voyage was ended and the Appletons were established in Ipswich in Massachusetts. Appleton had brought with him certain books which his brother-in-law, Robert Ryece, was sending to Winthrop. Ryece died in 1638 and by his will left lands in Monks Eleigh to Samuel Appleton, and to facilitate the management and disposal of them, Appleton had Thomas Lechford, the Boston notary, draw up a power of attorney in 1639 giving the necessary authority to six men, including his nephew Isaac Appleton, armiger, of Little Waldingfield, his kinsman John Gurdon, armiger, and his brother-in-law Rev. Henry Smith, D. D., Master of Magdalen College at Cambridge.*

Ipswich granted Mr. Appleton an eight acre homestead lot in the village and a farm of four hundred and sixty acres bounded on one side by Ipswich river and on another by Mile brook on December 20, 1638. In her will of 1636, Mrs. Sarah

* *Lechford's Note Book*, Publications of the American Antiquarian Society, VII: 154.

Dillingham named Appleton and Richard Saltonstall executors, and left to Appleton £5 and to his wife a silver porringer. In his final account, entered in 1645, Saltonstall refers to "my cousin Appleton."

Appleton was one of Ipswich's deputies to the General Court in 1637 but did not serve in this capacity again. Considering his position, this is surprising, and it is reasonably suggested that he may not have been in sympathy with the official attitude in the Hutchinson controversy, which would have made him unacceptable to authority. In 1637 he also served as a justice of the county court for the first and last time. His only other public office was as a member of the Essex grand jury in 1642. He was released from military training on account of age in 1650.

It is not known when Judith Appleton died. Samuel Appleton spent his last years in Rowley, presumably with his daughter Mrs. Phillips, and there he died in June, 1670. He left no will and there are no administration papers in the Essex Probate Court.

Children:

- i. MARY, bapt. Dec. 10, 1616, in Little Waldingfield; probably d. young.
- ii. JUDITH, bapt. Oct. 13, 1618, in Little Waldingfield; d. young.
- iii. MARTHA, bapt. Nov. 12, 1620, in Little Waldingfield; m. Richard Jacob of Ipswich. (*See Jacob.*)
- iv. JOHN, bapt. Nov. 17, 1622, in Little Waldingfield; m. Priscilla Glover who d. in Ipswich Feb. 18, 1697; d. in Ipswich Nov. 4, 1699, in his 77th year.
- v. SAMUEL, bapt. Feb. 2, 1624/5, in Little Waldingfield; m. (1) Hannah Paine; m. (2) in Newbury Dec. 8, 1656, Mary Oliver; d. in Ipswich May 15, 1696, after a career of great civil and military distinction.
- vi. SARAH, b. about 1628; m. in Oct., 1652, Rev. Samuel Phillips of Rowley, where she d. July 15, 1714, aged 86 years.
- vii. JUDITH; m. in Ipswich Dec. 24, 1657, Samuel Rogers; d. in Ipswich in July, 1659, *s.p.*

V

BROWN, OF IPSWICH

BROWN

JOHN BROWN was in Ipswich by 1640. He first lived in the village, on Heartbreak road, possibly going out to work his farm which was in the district called Candlewood. In 1723 his daughter Martha Thorne and Thomas Burnham testified that "Above seventy years ago they knew old Mr. John Brown live in a house in Ipswich town near the house of the Reverend Mr. William Hubbards and that before the year one thousand six hundred & sixty the said John Brown built a house at the farm and lived in said house he built at the farm till the year of Our Lord one thousand six hundred and sixty-four." This farm was owned by many generations of his descendants.

Brown's name appears but seldom in the records. Another Ipswich man, "John Brown the glazier," of less estimable character, is frequently mentioned, but the two are easily differentiated. In March, 1671, John Brown the farmer sued John Andrews for debt, seeking recovery of payment for a horse that he had sold to Andrews. Brown's wife Mary and daughter Martha were witnesses, and he recovered judgment, payment to be made in malt.* Anne Chase had been Brown's servant before May, 1670, and in 1674 Mary Lambert, aged sixteen, was in his service. In 1672 he was released from training upon payment of 5s. a year to the company.†

John Brown died September 13, 1677. Administration on his estate was granted to John Brown, his elder son, November 6, 1677. The farm then consisted of thirteen acres of upland, thirty acres of marsh with some islands of upland, a house and barn, valued at £250. Another dwelling house was worth £30. The "lands toward Wenham," engaged to his younger son Nathaniel, were listed at £150. The very detailed inventory, in a total of £606, shows that the farm-house had three rooms, the hall, the parlour and the chamber. He owned a large stock of cattle, horses and sheep.

The court ordered John to pay £10 each to his sisters Jacob and Thorne, besides the £50 paid or intended to be paid to them by their father. Nathaniel, who had received £200 at the time of his marriage, should have no more. The rest of the estate was to be settled on John, but he was to pay his mother £16, give her a room in the house with the necessary furniture and allow her £21 to be disposed of to her children at her death.

* *Records and Files*, IV: 334.

† *Proceedings of the Ipswich Historical Society*, XVIII: 89, contains genealogies of several Candlewood families, including Brown.

On April 1, 1679, John petitioned the court to be relieved of paying his sisters £10 and of allowing his mother £21 for legacies. He said, and his brother Nathaniel supported his statement, that their father had intended that his daughters should have £50 and no more and that it was not his intent that John should give his mother, who had gone to live with his sister Sarah Jacob, £21 for her disposal. After payment of debts (£39) and the above payments to his sisters and mother "the least of them" would have more than would be left clear to him, the eldest son. His father had settled Nathaniel upon a better estate than he left to John, but John had paid £150 toward the purchase of that estate ("the lands toward Wenham") "and when my brother married my father desired me to let him have my interest in the estate, which I did." With justice, the court granted the petition.*

Children:

- i. JOHN, b. about 1640 according to his age at death, but about 1644 according to various depositions ("about 30" in 1674); m. in 1677 Hannah ———. He was probably the John Brown of Ipswich who saw service in King Philip's war.† He remained with his parents until his father's death, when he married a girl to whom his father had been opposed. In 1679 his brother Nathaniel said that his father had talked to him about the woman who was now John's wife, that he had told his father that she was a very suitable person but that his father had said that he was not willing John should marry her.‡ He inherited the paternal farm and was also a house-carpenter. In 1684 he bought the Bishop farm and conveyed one-third of it to his son William in 1714 and two-thirds to his son James in 1721.§ He made other small gifts of land to his sons William, John and Nathaniel, and on Nathaniel's death in 1719 his brothers and sisters agreed that his land should revert to their father. In a deed to William in 1707, John Brown's wife *Elizabeth* released dower, but this was probably an error of the scrivener. John Browne died April 9, 1727, in his 88th year (gravestone) but aged 84 (town record). Hannah Browne, widow of "farmer John Browne," died Nov. 19, 1727 (town record), but March 17, 1727, in her 76th year (gravestone).

Children, born in Ipswich:

1. *John*, b. July, 1678; m. Mary Fellows.
2. *William*; m. April 17, 1703, Dorothy Giddings.
3. *James*; m., int. July 13, 1723, Sarah Cogswell.
4. *Mary*, b. July 3, 1685; d. Oct. 25, 1686.
5. *Sarah*; m., int. Sept. 25, 1708, John Cogswell.
6. *Mary*; m., int. March 31, 1716, Samuel Choate.
7. *Nathaniel*; d. July 18, 1719, in his 29th year (gravestone). On June 2, 1721, his brothers John, James and

* *Probate Records of Essex County*, III: 160.

† *Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony*, Waters, I: 219.

‡ *Records and Files*, VII: 189.

§ *Essex Deeds*, 27: 28; 39: 54.

William Brown and sisters Sarah Cogswell, widow, and Mary Choate, signed an agreement as to his property.*

8. *Elizabeth*; d. May 7, 1716, in her 22nd year (grave-stone).
- ii. *SARAH*; m. in Ipswich Dec. 21, 1671, Thomas Jacob. (*See Jacob.*)
- iii. *MARTHA*; m. Bernard Thorne.
- iv. *NATHANIEL*, b. about 1652 ("about 17" in 1668, "about 18" in 1670, 22 in 1674); m. Dec. 16, 1673, Judith Perkins.† As a boy he acted as shepherd for the Candlewood farmers and his first depositions are in regard to that service. He farmed the land given him by his father. He conveyed a dwelling house and land in Wenham to his eldest son John in 1695/6‡ and part of the family homestead to his son Nathaniel in 1706.§

The will of Mr. Nathaniel Brown of Ipswich was made Oct. 10, 1716, and proved June 17, 1717. To his wife Judith he left the land his father had given them at their marriage by deed of Dec. 22, 1673, also one-third of his other land, one-half of his personal estate and £6 a year to be paid by her four sons. To his son Jacob, the house in which Jacob now dwells and sixteen acres of land. To son James, "my now dwelling." To sons Nathaniel and John. To William, Nathan and Joseph Hasey, children of his daughter Elizabeth, deceased. To daughter Mary Hubbard, £30. To daughter Hannah Cogswell, £30. Residue to sons Jacob and James. Executors: sons John, Nathaniel and Jacob.||

Judith Brown was still living, at what must have been a very advanced age, on May 30, 1743, when she acknowledged a deed dated March 9, 1741, by which Judith Brown of Wenham, widow of Nathaniel Brown, late of Ipswich, conveyed to Nathan Brown, jr., and Benjamin Brown, sr., both of Ipswich, their relationship to her not stated, all her interest in the lands and houses in which they now dwell, as given by the last will of her late husband, Nathaniel Brown, to his son James, late of Ipswich, deceased.¶

Children:

1. *John*; moved to Preston, Conn.
2. *Nathaniel*; weaver, of Wenham.
3. *Elizabeth*; m. April 5, 1702, William Hasey of Rumney Marsh.
4. *Mary*; m., int. March 22, 1710, John Hubbard.
5. *Hannah*; m., int. Aug. 21, 1708, Edward Cogswell.
6. *Jacob*; m. (1), int. Jan. 10, 1707/8, Sarah Burnham; m. (2), int. Nov. 30, 1735, widow Mary Dane; m. (3), int. Nov. 14, 1761, Elizabeth Brown.
7. *James*, b. June 1, 1685; m. June 7, 1707, Mehitable Pengry.

* Essex Probate, 313: 308.

† There was another Nathaniel Brown, with a wife Judith, in Ipswich contemporaneously. Aged 25 in 1669, possibly an under-estimate, he built a soap-house in 1661 or 1662 "to make pott ashes and sope," selling it to Joseph Leigh Dec. 3, 1671. On Dec. 26, 1671, Samuel Younglove, jr., sold his house-lot to Nathaniel Brown, "sope-boiler," and Brown sold it to William Goodhue April 1, 1673, his wife Judith releasing dower. (Ipswich Deeds, 3: 274, 252.) Judith Brown was a witness in May, 1670, and had "children" in the summer of 1672 (Records and Files, IV: 240; V: 143).

‡ Essex Deeds, 15: 57.

§ Essex Deeds, 19: 192.

¶ Essex Probate, 312: 65.

¶ Essex Deeds, 91: 168.

VI

DUTCH, OF GLOUCESTER AND IPSWICH

DUTCH

1. OSMUND DUTCH emigrated to New England from Bridport, co. Dorset. In 1619 he married a woman who was twenty-seven years old, and if, as is ordinarily the case, he was at least her equal in age, we may set the year of his birth as 1592. Obviously the estimate of his age in 1660, "about 50," is an understatement, while the declaration of his widow that he was "upward of 100" at his death in 1684 may be an exaggeration.

The existing parish registers of Bridport do not commence until 1600, and a thorough search of the borough archives and the Dorset probate registries has failed to disclose Osmund Dutch's parentage. In the Dorset Muster Roll of 1530, under Bridport, are listed "Douchemen VII" (seven Dutchmen) of whom the first is "Willym Douche" who possessed a bow and a half a sheaf of arrows.* Possibly he was Osmund's ancestor. The name Dutch, however, was too well scattered throughout Dorset by the middle of the sixteenth century for William Douche to have been the sole local progenitor of the name. As Osmund named his oldest son Robert, his father may possibly have been that Robert Dutch who was buried in Bridport on May 30, 1606, in which case we are obliged to give Robert a second wife, Katherine Forde, married November 2, 1602.

Dutch entries in the Bridport Register, 1600-1638, other than those of Osmund Dutch's immediate family, are as follows:

BAPTISMS

1604	May	6	Anne, dau. of Robert Dooch.
1605	Nov.	18	Edward, son of Robert Dowch.
1610	Dec.	16	Susana, base dau. of Katern Douch.
1610/1	Mar.	15	Rebecca, dau. of John Douch.
1613	July	18	William, son of John Douch.
1617	Aug.	12	Dorothy, dau. of John Douch.
1618/9	Jan.	20	Marie, dau. of William Dowch.
1623	Sept.	6	Joane, dau. of William Douch.
1628	Jan.	6	Mary, dau. of Robert Douch.
1634	Sept.	20	Ann, dau. of John Douch.
1634	Oct.	21	Marie, dau. of Edward Dooch.
1637	Oct.	3	Robert, son of Edward Dooch.
1641	Aug.	29	Joane, dau. of Edward Dooch.

MARRIAGES

1602	Nov.	2	Robert Douch and Katherine Forde.
1608	Apr.	25	John Dowche and Elizabeth Miller.
1615	Jan.	8	John Wyet and Katherine Douch.
1618	Apr.	7	William Dowch and Rachel Long (?)
1632	Jan.	14	Edward Douch and Anne Northover.

* Public Record Office, Exchequer, Treasury of, Receipt, vol. 29, fo. 25.

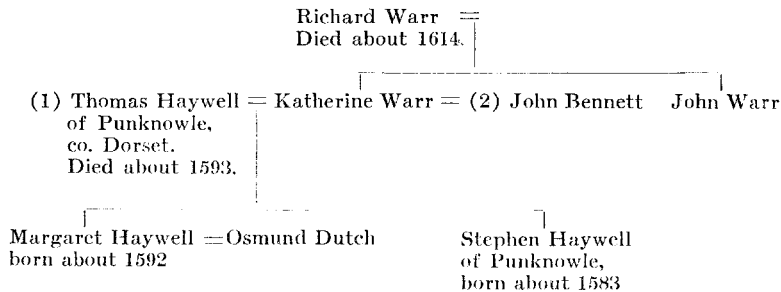
BURIALS

1604	June 16	Anne, dau. of Robert Douche.
1604/5	Mar. 15	Emet Douch of Allington.
1606	May 30	Robert Douch.
1612	Feb. 2	Susan Douch, a base child.
1619	June 20	Edeth, dau. of ——— Dowch.
1638	Apr. 1	Jane, dau. of William Dooch.

In 1620 Osmund Dutch married Margaret Haywell of Punknowle, a Dorset parish a few miles east of Bridport, and on March 19, 1620/1, they brought a suit in Chancery against her brother and uncle of a type which makes the genealogist's heart rejoice. In this bill they set forth that Thomas Haywell, Margaret's father, was seized in fee of buildings, land, meadow and pasture in Punknowle of a yearly value of £16. By his will, made in December, 1593, Thomas Haywell devised this property to his father-in-law, Richard Warr, grandfather of the plaintiff Margaret, to be held for fourteen years, the income to be used to pay Haywell's debts and any residue to be accumulated as "stock" for his daughter Margaret. After the trust fell in, the property was to go to Stephen Haywell, the testator's son. The co-executors of the will were Stephen, then ten years of age, and Margaret, then only one year of age. When Stephen was about twenty years old, he entered upon the property and, with his grandfather, rented it to one John Bennett. The fourteen year limit passed and nothing was paid to Margaret, although an over-plus of £224 was received from the rents and profits of the land, which was due her for her preferment in marriage. About six years before the suit was commenced Richard Warr, a man of "great substance and wealth," made his will and left his property to his son and executor, John Warr. The plaintiffs believed that had Richard Warr lived until the time of their marriage, which took place "aboute one yeaere past," he would have satisfied Margaret's just dues. They asked for an accounting and payment by Stephen Haywell and John Warr. The defendants, in their answer, gave the date of Thomas Haywell's will as "19 December in the 36th year of the reign of Queen Elizabeth" and added that Richard Warr, Thomas Hall and John Bownd were appointed overseers. They state that Haywell's personal property was valued at only £19: 5: 2, that he left debts of about £115: 11: 6, and that the receipts of the property during the fourteen year trust were only £105: 6: 6, so that Richard Warr, who had paid the

debts, was really £10 out of pocket. Thomas Haywell's widow, Katherine, married John Bennett, and they challenged Richard Warr for her dower rights, which claim he believed to be just and in payment thereof allowed them to occupy the property for four years. Margaret Haywell was about twenty-four or twenty-five years old when her grandfather Warr died, which was about All Saints Day, 1615, and if money was due her he would have paid it, if she had demanded it, as he was more able to pay than she to forbear. They offered arbitration. The result of the suit is not known, but one suspects that the plaintiffs did not prove their case.*

From the papers in this case we can produce the following pedigree for Osmund Dutch's first wife:



Thomas Haywell was probably a son of Edward Haywell of Punknowle who was listed in the Dorset Muster Roll of 1542. He and John Hall (the overseer of Thomas Haywell's will was Thomas Hall) were sued by John Napper, lord of the manor of Punknowle, for neglecting to pay their rents to him. They answered that they had bought the fee simple of their lands from William Childs, the previous lord, before he sold the manor to Napper.†

Whether Richard Warr was identical with Richard Warr, yeoman, of Loders and Bothenhampton, near Bridport, in 1575 and 1603,‡ is undetermined. The well-known family of Warre of Hestercombe, co. Somerset, owned estates in Dorset and doubtless had younger branches there.

Margaret, wife of Osmund Dutch, was buried at Bridport December 11, 1628, and, with small children to care for, Dutch remarried in three months, March 20, 1628/9, his second wife

* Chancery Proceedings, C. 2 James I, D 6/75. Both the Haywell and Warr wills are missing.

† Chancery Proceedings, 1558-1579, No. 132/4.

‡ Court of Requests, *Browne v. Moone*, 221; *Warren v. Warren*, 364 W.

being Grace Pratte. Between 1600 and 1630 only one family of Pratt appears in the Bridport register, that of Bennett Pratt who married Ann Primrose May 12, 1601. The first child of Bennett Pratt whose baptism is recorded was John, baptized January 15, 1609, and it is quite probable that Grace was an older child. Ann Pratt was succeeded by a wife Margaret, who died of plague and was buried August 30, 1626. Two sons of Bennett Pratt, baptized in 1628 and 1630, were either children of a third wife or grandchildren through an unrecorded son Bennett born before 1609.

In New England Osmund Dutch is first found in Newport, Rhode Island, where he was admitted an inhabitant in March, 1638/9. His stay there was short, however, as by July, 1639, he had gone to Cape Ann, formed a partnership in the fishing trade with Thomas Millward of Noodle's Island and made the great decision to send for his family and remain in America permanently. He went to Boston and employed Thomas Lechford, the first lawyer of the colony, to write his wife in Bridport and send her the documents necessary for the disposal of their English property before she should set sail to join him. Dutch could not write, but Lechford undoubtedly set down his spoken words with little change.

"Good wife, my love remembered to you in the Lord, These are to lett you understand that God be prayesd I am well in health heere in this Country at the time of the writing this letter, and so I hope are you in health together with our Children. Seing it hath pleased God to bleese me heere in this land since I came last, I thanke God, I have cleared 40l. and shall be able to make good provision for to intertaine you & my children, as I hope in the Lord. Therefore I desire you would by all meanes come over to me wth the children by the f[all] or as soone as you can the next spring: To that end and purpose I have hereinlosed sent you an Assignement of the house and therin a deed of gift also of the goods, sealed before our honoured Governo^r, wherewithall I have intrusted yo^r kinsman Mr. Thomas Bishop, the haberdasher, whome I Doe intreate to sell the house at as good advantage as he can and such of the goods as are not fitt for transportation, and wth the money to make provision for yo^r comming, for clothes for yo^rselfe & the children, & for some refreshments by the way, and for yo^r passage: Of the goods that you have therewth you sell not any brasse,

pewter, bedding nor linnen: but furnish yo^rselfe wth these as well as you can. And if you want any thing more to come forth, or to make yo^r better provision, then I shall take order wth my partner Mr. Millard of Noddill's Island, who is my partner in the fishing trade w^{ch} we now are setting upon, that he shall deale with Mr. Maurice Tompson, merchant, Dwelling at [*blank*] in London, to send you what money you & M^r Bishop shall thinke will be further needfull, besides the money to be made of the house & household implements not fitt to bring in the ship. And you are to send M^r. Tompson this inclosed letter and note under M^r. Miller's hand, and he will send you downe the money by the carrier. You must take care that by the way you may have some refreshments besides the ships provision for yo^rselfe and my children; that is, some suger and fine ruske or bisket, and a little barrell of ale to make warme meate, and oatmeale & currants & a little spice, and some fine flower & eggs, & a few chickens wth a henne or two, and a little butter & honey. If you cannot come by Weymouth, then come by Bristoll wth one M^r. Hazzard to whome I have already spoken."*

With the letter went an assignment from Osmund Douch of Bridport, co. Dorset, mariner, to Thomas Bishop of Bridport, haberdasher, of one tenement and garden, lying in the East street in Bridport, purchased from Robert Ward of Apsham, co. Dorset, gentleman, for the term of the life of the survivor of the said Osmund, Grace his wife or Robert his son. John Bishop, feltmaker, and Richard Hallett, carpenter, were appointed his attorneys, and the assignment also covered all his goods and chattels. One would like to have been in East street when Goodwife Dutch received this letter and hurried forth to her cousin, the haberdasher, to have it read amid general excitement.

Lechford also drew up two other papers for Dutch which indicate that before his business arrangements with Millward were made, he was associated with Mr. William Hooke. One is a bond from Dutch, mariner, of Cape Ann, to Mr. Hooke, merchant, in the sum of £40, conditioned on the payment of £20 to Hooke at Mr. Maverick's house on Noodle's Island on July 17, 1639. The other is Hooke's release, dated the following day, which states that Dutch had undutifully departed from his service, with a boat.

* *Lechford's Note Book*, Publications of the American Antiquarian Society, VII: 109-113.

When his family arrived Dutch settled them in Gloucester. There are no deeds to him, but it is supposed that he bought from John Sadler land at the easterly part of Gloucester harbor where a place was long known as "Dutch's slough." He had five acres at Eastern point, and in 1674 "Osmand Dutches Island in little Good Harbour" is mentioned. Dutch mortgaged all his Gloucester property to Thomas Bishop of Ipswich to secure the payment of £50 in 1663.* In 1678 he had given his son-in-law Samuel Elwell two acres of marsh at "Stark naught harbor."†

Nathaniel Pitman sued Dutch for debt in 1641. Dutch had bought a raft from Pitman on condition that the raft would "swim," which it didn't. Dutch served as selectman in 1650, was a member of a trial jury in 1655 and in 1658 contributed to the salary of the parson, Rev. Mr. Millett. In 1662 he sued John French for holding back some cloth and spoiling a coat made for Dutch and a suit for one of his sons, and won the case. He was fined in 1662 for resisting an officer coming to levy a fine for his neglect of military training. His age was "about sixty" in 1663. The Dutches had a servant, Mary Davis, who spent her evenings out with "the Shoalers," who did no good to any girl's reputation. His principal difficulties and suits were with John Meagher, a shoreman, with verdicts for either side. In 1674 he signed a petition against allowing a tavern near the meeting-house.

Grace Dutch, being a midwife, often gave court testimony. She was forty-two years old in 1658 and "about fifty" in both 1660 and 1664. In 1653, for saying that Goody Dutch was suspected of witchcraft, Edmond Marshall was forced to make acknowledgment of his sin of defamation in the meeting-houses of Gloucester, Ipswich and Salem. Forty years later Grace would have been in deadly danger.

Osmund Dutch died in November or December, 1684. His widow, Grace Dutch, and his son Robert Dutch were appointed administrators on March 31, 1685, when they attested the inventory which had been taken by William Vincent and Thomas Prince on December 11, 1684. The estate was valued at only £83: 10: 0, the principal items being the homestead at £71 and five acres at Eastern point, worth £2.‡ Grace Dutch found

* Ipswich Deeds, 2: 148.

† Essex Deeds, 4: 190.

‡ Essex Probate, 304: 115.

herself in straitened circumstances, and addressed an informative petition to the General Court as follows:

“The Humble Petition of the Poore distressed widdow Grace Duch of the towne of Gloucester to the honoured Generall Courte now setting at Boston this 21st July 1685

Yo^{er} poore humble and distressed petitioner sheweth that whereas it pleased God to take away my deare husband out of this live in December last past with whome I lived above fifty yeeres with whome I Lived very poore in the Later parte of his Life and underwent a great deale of Sorrow and trouble hee being very ancient: by his owne relation above a hundred yeeres of age & was very helpless for severall yeeres before hee dyed and but Little wherewith all to mayntayne him and my Selve but what I Laboured for onely sume cattle which wee ware Little the better for and Land which have Layed wast with out fences severall yeeres soe that it have not beene any wise beneficiall to us while hee Lived nor to mee since his death and which the honoured county Court holden at Ipswich last March when the inventory of his Estate was regestered was informed of at the county court holden at Salem last June and [written over] made my addreeses that there might bee some of the Land Sold for my maintenance in my old age haveinge nothing to helpe my Selve neither for ffood nor rayment of which I have not [conveniencess?] and now am by Gods providance taken sicke and am in very great want which doth make mee humbly crave of this honoured courte to take into yo^{er} serious consideration and grant mee the favour that there may bee a acre or two of Salte marsh sold for my p^rsent reliefe which is the only thinge that will yield money without which yo^{er} poore petitioner cannot bee supplied in the tyme of my great distress I should not have made soe bold with yo^{er} honours but that I was informed by the honoured county Courtes above mentioned that they could not grant the sale of any of the Land or else yo^{er} poore petitioner had not made soe bold wth yo^{er} Honours therefore pray pardon on the boldnesse and grant the humble & needy request and desires of yo^{er} Humble and needy petitioner whoe prayeth for yo^{er} Honours wealfare Grace Duch.”*

The Court on the following day granted her permission to sell the land belonging to the estate, unless her children should comfortably provide for her, with the advice of Lieut. William Haskell, Mr. James Stevens and Stephen Glover and with the

* Massachusetts Archives, 16: 382, 383.

consent of the County Court of Ipswich. Her sons Samuel and Hezekiah had already given their mother permission to sell two acres of marsh two weeks before she presented her petition, and on September 16, 1685, she deeded the two acres to Mr. William Ellery, her sons Samuel, Hezekiah and Robert and her daughters Esther Elwell and Grace Hodgkins also signing.* In June, 1694, she made two sales, one of an acre and a half to her grandson Christopher Hodgkins and the other of the same extent to her son-in-law Samuel Elwell.† There is an endorsement on the latter deed stating that she was in great want of clothing, meat, drink and attendance.

Grace Dutch died in October, 1694, at Gloucester. During her widowhood she had lived with her daughter and son-in-law Esther and Samuel Elwell, and there is some evidence in a deposition by Joseph Gardner that they had not treated the old woman with proper consideration.

On July 16, 1703, Grace Hodgkins of Ipswich, the second daughter, was appointed administratrix *de bonis non* of the estate of her father Osmund Dutch, Robert Dutch, the son, having died and the eldest daughter (Alice Meacham) having given a release. Grace Hodgkins, acting through her son Thomas Hodgkins as her attorney, proceeded to claim certain small lots of land which her mother had sold to four Gloucester men in unrecorded transactions by which they were to take possession after her death, which looks much like a kind way of supplying the poor woman with funds. Alice Meacham certainly felt that her mother had received adequate payment and that Grace Hodgkins' claims were not fully justified for on March 30, 1704, she made the following declaration:

"I Alice Meacham of Ipswich . . . widow & Eldest daughter of Osmund Dutch late of Gloucester . . . Deceased doe declare that Some time in the month of June past or July past Thomas Hodgskin Sonne of my Sister Grace Hodgskins of said Ipswich coming to my house I was by his perswasions & threatening overcome and did sett my hand to a writing concerning my father Osmund Dutches Estate though it was contrary to my mind and has bin a great trouble to me Ever Since Especially Since I have understood that it was to Incourage to ye Gitting of some lands that were my father Dutches and were Sold by my Mother Grace Dutch since his death and I doe verily be-

* Essex Probate, 304: 151; Essex Deeds, 21: 10.

† Essex Deeds, 10: 2, 63.

lieve that the moneys that were had for said Landes Sold was Improved for Said Mothers Maintenance & was all Little Enuffe to Maintaine my said Mother She being So Aged & living so Long after my said father: and not withstanding said writing I doe hereby . . . give & grant my full & free consent to ye Sale of all . . . those Lands that have been disposed of by my said Mother . . . Since my said ffathers death and I doe . . . Confirm to my sister Ester Elwell of said Gloucester The widdow & relict of Samuel Ellwell Late of said Gloucester Deceased . . . All ye right . . . that I either had now have or might have in ye Estate left by my Said father Osmund Dutch Deceased . . . She ye said Ester Ellwell & her husband having taken the care of and provided for my Said Mother Grace Dutch while she lived a widdow.”*

The Court allowed the Hodgkineses to collect certain sums from the buyers of the lands in order to clear the titles, and on September 12, 1704, Thomas Hodgkins presented an account. The estate was formally closed on March 4, 1705/6.†

Esther Elwell in 1705 and 1713, as “creditor of the estate of Grace Dutch widow,” sold common rights pertaining to her father’s lands, to which her title must have been dubious, to say the least, and as late as 1730 the holders of Osmund Dutch’s former homestead and lands in Gloucester were buying up for small sums the “rights and claims” of his descendants to the third and fourth generation. These deeds are valuable genealogical documents, however.‡

Children, by first wife:

2. i. ROBERT, born about 1621.
- ii. MARGARET, buried in Bridport Feb. 13, 1628/9.
- iii. MARIE, bapt. Dec. 1, 1627, and buried Jan. 7, 1628/9, in Bridport.

By second wife:

- iv. GRACE, bapt. in Bridport Dec. 6, 1629; d. young.
- v. WILLIAM, buried in Bridport Feb. 9, 1631/2.
- vi. SUSANNA, buried in Bridport June 11, 1633.
- vii. WILLIAM, bapt. Sept. 21, 1635, and buried July 16, 1636, in Bridport.
- viii. ALICE; m. (1) John Newman of Ipswich on whose estate administration was granted to her March 31, 1674; m. (2) Dr. John Dane before March, 1676; § m. (3) Jeremiah Meacham; d. prior to May 4, 1704, when John Dane, her step-son, sold property “immediately after the death of Alice Meacham, widow and relique of Meacham, late of Salem, and formerly widow of Dr. John Dane.”

* Essex Deeds, 16: 117.

† Essex Probate, No. 8418.

‡ Essex Deeds, 19: 230; 31: 183; 49: 286; 61: 23, 24; 54: 218.

§ *Records and Files*, VI: 127.

- ix. GRACE; m. William Hodgkins of Ipswich.
- x. ESTHER; m. June 7, 1658, Samuel Elwell of Gloucester; d. Sept. 6, 1721, aged about 82.
- 3. xi. SAMUEL, b. about 1645.
- 4. xii. HEZEKIAH, b. March 29, 1647, in Gloucester.
- xiii. MARY; m. June 22, 1669, Joseph Elwell of Gloucester; probably that Mary Elwell who d. March 25, 1680.

2. ROBERT² DUTCH (*Osmund*¹) was born in 1621 or thereabouts (he was "about 35" in 1657 and "about 45" in 1666 and 1667). He was, therefore, a boy of seventeen or eighteen when he left Bridport with his step-mother and his small sisters in 1639. Before 1646 he had married Mary Kimball, and doubtless sailed with his father on fishing voyages. Later he became a coasting captain, carrying freight between the New England ports.

He first lived in Gloucester, where, in 1651, he bought a house and land from John Goyt. In 1657 he sold this property to Edward Harraden and moved his family to Ipswich which was his home thereafter.

Dutch had taken the Oath of Fidelity before Governor Endicott on November 17, 1654, and ten days later was sitting on the county jury. He subscribed 15s. toward Rev. Thomas Millett's salary in 1657. He was in trouble for "reproachful speeches" in 1653, fined for striking a man in 1659 and sued Shoreborn Wilson for abusing his wife in 1661. On the civil side of the court he was frequently a plaintiff, generally seeking unpaid carrying-charges from delinquent shippers. His wife was in court in 1666 for wearing a silk scarf, but, as she was discharged, it is apparent that her husband proved that he was worth more than £100, which the law required before condoning any extravagance in dress. In 1667 he was a member of a jury of inquest on the body of Patience Roberts.*

In 1679 he had ordered a new ketch to be built by William Carr of Salisbury. It was to have a pinke stern, to be thirty-four feet in length by the keel, twelve feet by the beam and six feet deep in the hold. Dutch claimed that the ketch was defective but lost the suit which he brought against Carr.†

Mary (Kimball) Dutch died July 12, 1686, and her husband survived only until the following August 21.

Robert Dutch made his will August 13, 1686. To eldest son Robert, 20s. To son Samuel, "my lot on the other side of the way." To youngest son Benjamin, the house, barn, homestead, all movables within doors. The cattle were to be divided between Samuel

* See *Records and Files*, I-VII, by index.

† *Records and Files*, VII: 167-9.

and Benjamin, who were to pay the debts. To the children of son John, deceased, £10, of which £4 was to be paid to Hannah and the other £6 to be divided equally between the other children and their mother. All interests at Cape Anne to sons Samuel and Benjamin, and they to be executors. Overseers: Thomas Davis, Sr., Job Bishop. Witnesses: Thomas Dennis, Sr., Job Bishop, Contant Elles, Thos. Tousey. The will was proved September 14, 1687. Jacob Foster and Thomas Tousey took the inventory on September 27, 1687. The dwelling house, barn and land adjoining were valued at £95. As is often the case in early inventories, articles were strangely associated—"one bible and one brush, 3s." There were nine joined stools in the house. Dutch backs were strong.*

An old common right, not disposed of in his will, was divided into six parts, for the heirs of his six children, on March 2, 1720/1.†

Children, born in Ipswich:

5. i. JOHN, b. May 1, 1646.
6. ii. ROBERT, b. June 24, 1647.
- iii. MARY; m. Giles Cowes July 29, 1668.
7. iv. SAMUEL, b. June, 1650.
- v. HANNAH; m. James Collins Dec. 22, 1674.
- vi. CALEB, b. May 1, 1659; d. *s.p.*
8. vii. BENJAMIN, b. Dec. 4, 1665.
- viii. ———, b. Aug. 8, 1668; d. young.

3. SAMUEL² DUTCH (*Osmund*¹) was born in 1645, according to two depositions. In 1663 he was about eighteen. Like his father he followed the sea as captain of a coasting vessel. Just before he was embarking in 1666, John Meagers, who had some grudge against him, attempted with the aid of Hugh Row to retain Samuel in the house of John Collins, but he escaped to his canoe and thereby to his ship.‡ His home port was Salem after his marriage, about 1675, to Susanna More. Her father, Capt. Richard More, had come to America as a small boy in the "Mayflower" in 1620 and settled in Salem by 1639.§ Capt. More deeded

* Essex Probate, 304: 366-7.

† Essex Probate, 313: 327.

‡ *Records and Files*, III: 351.

§ Many years ago while working on the Dutch family at the county court house in Salem, I came upon certain evidence that, through the marriage of his daughter Susanna to Samuel Dutch, the blood of Captain Richard More of Salem, who was then known to have been the boy Richard More of Elder Brewster's household on the *Mayflower* in 1620, was circulating in the veins of several Essex County families. To my surprise, an examination of the list of *Mayflower* passengers from whom descent could be proved, as listed by the Society of Mayflower Descendants, made no mention of Richard More. Hastily running down the lines until it seemed probable that many, possibly hundreds, of descendants of Richard More were then living, I put the material into rough shape and sent it to Mr. George Ernest Bowman, the editor of *The Mayflower Descendant*, suggesting that More's name be added to the list if he found my evidences acceptable. This communication was not acknowledged

a quarter of an acre in the northern corner of his orchard to Samuel and Susanna, and entailed it upon their children, in 1684.*

In 1679, aged about thirty-four, Samuel testified to being at Col. Bridgham's house in Virginia in 1677. He was master of Ebenezer Gardner's ketch in 1685. In 1678 Susanna Dutch, aged twenty-eight, gave witness to the good character of Mary, wife of Giles Corey, who was later to suffer in the witchcraft delusion.†

Dutch died about July 6, 1693, and his widow was appointed administratrix of his estate. The undated inventory valued the entailed More lot at £20 and the house on it at £18. Susanna was allowed her dower and expenses, including the cost of bringing up her child ("2 years & 1/2 to ye day" on January 6, 1695/6), but the estate was insolvent and paid the claimants only three shillings on the pound. She was discharged as administratrix February 1, 1696/7.‡

Before December, 1694, Susanna Dutch had married Richard Hutton of Wenham, and on his death she married a third husband, John Knowlton of Ipswich Hamlet, father of her son-in-law, Benjamin Knowlton, the bans being published April 11, 1714, in Wenham. She was living October 30, 1728, when she gave a receipt to the executor of her last husband's estate.

Children, recorded in Salem:

- i. BARBARA, bapt. Dec. 2, 1677; d. April 10, 1678.
- ii. SUSANNA, bapt. Sept. 28, 1679; d. young.
- iii. SUSANNA, bapt. Sept. 22, 1683; her step-father Richard Hutton was appointed her guardian in 1695/6;§ of Ipswich Dec. 26, 1705, when she m. Benjamin Knowlton who lived in Ipswich Hamlet and d. Dec. 1764, leaving a will in which he names his wife, son Benjamin and daughters Susanna Dodge and Elizabeth Brown.

and several weeks later I again wrote to Mr. Bowman asking whether he had received it. In the ensuing period of silence, I should, had I not been rather simple, have suspected Mr. Bowman and sent the *data* to the genealogical page of the *Boston Evening Transcript* where they could have had prompt publication, but, as it was, I was totally unprepared for the next issue of *The Mayflower Descendant*, that dated April, 1920, in which the leading article was entitled "Captain Richard More of Salem, Mass., Can Now Be Added to the List of Proved Mayflower Ancestors," by George Ernest Bowman. Therein Mr. Bowman stated: "This article announces the most important discovery I have made in nearly a quarter of a century devoted to the study of the Mayflower passengers and their descendants When I published the article identifying Capt. Richard More of Salem I had on file data which led me to believe that he would eventually be added to the list of proved Mayflower Ancestors; but it did not seem advisable to print an announcement to this effect, until I had secured additional evidence As a result of this gradual accumulation of data, however, I can now make the first public announcement that Richard More will, in future, be included in the list of Mayflower Ancestors from whom descent can be proved. . . . It is especially pleasing to me that, as a result of my researches, I have added to the list of proved Mayflower Ancestors the boy, Richard More, who was brought to this country in the Mayflower, by my own ancestor, Elder William Brewster."

* Essex Deeds, 6: 123.

† *Records and Files*, VII: 148.

‡ Essex Probate, 305: 128-131, 154.

§ Essex Probate, 305: 131.

Through these children the Mayflower blood of Richard More is carried into many northern New England families.*

iv. CHRISTIAN, bapt. June 1689; d. young.

4. HEZEKIAH² DUTCH (*Osmund*¹) was born in Gloucester March 29, 1647, and became one of his native town's fishermen. In 1663, aged "about eighteen," he testified in the suit brought by John Meager against his father, and three years later he was on a voyage after mackerel with his brother Samuel.† In 1674 he signed a paper opposing the granting of a tavern license to a house near the church and protesting against the disorder of the "youngsters" on training days.‡ His wife was undoubtedly that Martha Dutch, aged about twenty-six, who testified in the case of goodwife Dicer, accused of "railing" against Mrs. Hollingsworth, in 1679.§

He probably died four or five years after his marriage, and his widow married William Jewell of Jewell's Island in Casco Bay, a lonely spot which Jewell had occupied as the sole settler from before 1675. He was drowned while on his way to the mainland and his wife's two daughters fell heir to the island which they deeded to Joseph Hendley in 1735. In this document they called Jewell their "father," but in 1767 one David Mitchell spoke of them as Jewell's wife's daughters.||

Children:

- i. MARTHA; summonsed to give testimony in the witchcraft trials of Alice Parker and Anne Pudeator, 1692; bapt. "at age" in Salem, June 1694; m. in Salem April 13, 1699, John Legros, a Jerseyman; both living in 1735; at least seven children, including a son Hezekiah. Martha Mazury *alias* Dutch, bapt. "at age" in Salem Jan. 13, 1716/7, was very probably her illegitimate daughter.
- ii. MARY; m. (1) Christopher Page of Marblehead; m. (2) Jan. 25, 1713/4, Joseph Ashton of Marblehead who d. Aug. 22, 1725, aged 47 (gravestone); she was still his widow in 1730,¶ but by 1735 had m. (3) John Chin of Marblehead; two Page daughters and at least four Ashton children.

5. JOHN³ DUTCH (*Robert*,² *Osmund*¹) was born in Ipswich May 1, 1646. He was a partner of his brother Samuel in the coasting trade. He married, about 1670, Elizabeth Roper.

In 1666, aged about twenty, he testified with his father in the case *Ashbie v. Wilson*. He was a witness in each of the family law-

* Essex Deeds, 54: 213.

† *Records and Files*, III: 120, 328.

‡ *Records and Files*, V: 361.

§ *Records and Files*, VII: 238.

¶ York Deeds, 34: 123; *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire*, p. 379.

‖ Essex Deeds, 54: 213.

suits, Thomas Wood against his grandfather Roper (1670), his father against Samuel Bishop (1675), his father against William Carr (1679), and was a defendant in the suit of Roger Derby directed principally against his brother Samuel in 1680. In 1679, as assignee of Mr. Thomas Woodbridge, he sued William Carr for debt.

John Dutch died November 5, 1685, and on March 1, 1685/6, his widow and administratrix, Elizabeth Dutch, entered an inventory of his estate. The house, barn and about an acre of land was valued at £100, and the eighth part of a sloop at £10, the appraisal being made by Simon Stacy and Nehemiah Jewett. The widow died of small-pox before March 31, 1691, when her brother John Roper was granted administration. The detailed inventory of the contents of the homestead, still valued at £100, shows that it was well supplied with furniture, linen and utensils.*

Children, born in Ipswich:

- i. SAMUEL; d. Feb. 14, 1671.
- ii. ELIZABETH, b. Feb. 11, 1672; m. before 1692 Isaac Ringe; d. May 3, 1700.
- iii. SUSANNA, b. July 13, 1675; m. about 1699 Lieut. Joseph Kinsman; d. Nov. 9, 1734.†
- iv. JOHN, b. June 17, 1677; living in 1692 but d. *s.p.* before 1711, when his brother Benjamin was their grandfather Roper's only surviving grandson and heir.‡
- v. BENJAMIN, b. Aug. 9, 1680.
- vi. NATHANIEL, b. Feb. 18, 1681/2; living in 1692, but d. *s.p.* before 1711.
- vii. HANNAH; her brother-in-law Isaac Ringe was appointed her guardian March 1, 1696/7;§ m. May 7, 1705, Jonathan Fellows.||

6. ROBERT³ DUTCH (*Robert*,² *Osmund*¹) was born in Ipswich June 24, 1647. In 1662 he took a heifer, which his grandfather Kimball claimed, out of Obadiah Wood's yard, and Kimball said "he would uphold the boy in what he had done," but the ensuing suit was won by Wood. Possibly young Robert lived with his grandfather.¶

In King Philip's War he served under Capt. Lathrop and in the massacre of what is poetically known as "the flower of Essex" at Bloody Brook on September 10, 1675, he was "sorely wounded by a Bullet that razed to his Skull, and then mauled by the Indian Hatchets—left for dead by the Salvages and stripped by

* Essex Probate, 304: 153, 322.

† Gravestone in High Street cemetery, Ipswich.

‡ Supreme Judicial Court, No. 17706.

§ Essex Probate, 305: 154.

|| Fellows Genealogy in *Candlewood* by T. Franklin Waters, Ipswich Historical Society Publications, XVI.

¶ *Records and Files*, II: 349.

them of all but his skin," but, being found and cared for by Capt. Moseley on the following morning, recovered from his wounds.*

He married in December, 1677, Hannah Lovell, daughter of Thomas Lovell of Ipswich, who named her in his will in 1709/10. They moved to Bristol, Rhode Island, by 1681 when his name appears on a list of the inhabitants. On August 9, 1686, he took the Oath of Fidelity there and in 1689 he was stated in another Bristol list to have had a wife and three children. Although no deeds to or from him are of record, a road was laid out between the lands of Robert Dutch and John Wilkins in 1694. He served on the county jury of trials in 1695, this being the last mention of his name in Bristol records.

When and where Dutch died does not appear, but on April 29, 1710, in Ipswich, his widow, Hannah Dutch, published her intention to marry Joseph Ayres, Sr., and after the ceremony they settled in Brookfield, where she died July 2, 1740, Ayres dying on the following November 3, aged eighty-five.

Children:

- i. EBENEZER, b. in Ipswich June 29, 1679; no further record.
- ii. HANNAH, b. in Bristol Aug. 31, 1683; m. in Ipswich Nov. 9, 1703, John Baker.
- iii. THOMAS, b. in Bristol Sept. 13, 1685; no further record.
10. iv. ROBERT, b. in Ipswich Jan. 2, 1692.
- v. ELIZABETH, b. in Bristol Sept. 8, 1695; no further record.
- vi. MARY. The will of her uncle Thomas Lovell of Ipswich, made Aug. 10, 1717, left to "my cousin Mary Dutch, daughter of my natural sister Hannah Ayres, the bedsted she uses and my chest that used to hold linen and the pewter what I had and my stew pot of brass and six pounds." From the will it appears that Mary Dutch and another niece, Elizabeth Lovell, had been living with their childless uncle, and he directed his executor to allow them to continue to live in the parlour of his house. Mary Dutch gave a receipt to the executor on March 3, 1718/9.†

7. SAMUEL³ DUTCH (*Robert*,² *Osmund*¹) was born in Ipswich in June, 1650. He married Abigail Gidding February 12, 1673. Buying merchandise in the shops of Boston, he sold it from his sloop in the settlements on the coast of northern Massachusetts, New Hampshire and Maine, penetrating as far inland as Exeter by the tidal rivers, and also kept a shop in his native Ipswich.

In 1680 Roger and Lucretia Derby, Quakers and Ipswich shop-keepers, complained against Samuel Dutch, his brother John and their mother, accusing them of theft and disposal of stolen goods. Lucretia Derby affirmed that she was with Samuel

* *The History of the Indian Wars in New England*, Rev. William Hubbard, ed. by Samuel G. Drake, Roxbury, 1865, II: 116.

† Essex Probate, 312: 397-8, 498.

and John Dutch in Boston a few days before the dreadful fire of August 7, 1679, and that she bargained with them to transport to Ipswich in their sloop two bales of goods which she had bought and stored in Foster's warehouse. A week after the fire she and her husband went to Boston again, hearing on the way that Dutch had saved their goods, and went on board the sloop to claim them but found the bales broken and much missing. At first Lucretia was grateful that Dutch and his crew had saved anything in the confusion of this great water-front conflagration, but later she became suspicious that some of the cloth, lace, buttons, etc., which were sold from the Dutch house rightfully belonged to her and other victims of the fire. She had the house searched, finding there a fag end of kenting which she claimed. For Dutch, testimony was given that the Foster warehouse was burned and that he and his brothers had difficulty in saving the sloop, being obliged to cut away the mast. They saved such of their own goods and those of various consignors as they could, burying some in the dock mud, carrying some to the town-house and to the houses of John Ayres and Susanna Babel, who was a cousin of the Dutches in some undiscovered way. In the panic and confusion much was lost. He contended that the sales made in Ipswich by his family after the fire were all from his own stock. The testimony of Boston shop-keepers and a score of Ipswich women gives a colorful picture of what women bought and wore at this early colonial day. Eight of Ipswich's first citizens (Appleton, Whipple, Wainwright and others) testified to the honest character and dealings of the Dutch family, and, except for the unexplained kenting, for which Derby was to be paid 54s., the court decided that a case had not been made. Dutch was to pay costs, which were heavy because of the quantity of witnesses, and appealed to the Court of Assistants in Boston. There the judgment of the lower court was reversed and costs awarded to Dutch.*

Administration on the estate of Samuel Dutch was granted to his son Samuel April 17, 1712. By the inventory the homestead was valued at £120, there was silver plate worth £5: 8: 6 and three-eighths of a sloop, worth £26: 5: 0. The funeral cost £13: 15: 6. By the division the widow received her dower of one-third of the whole estate, the eldest son Samuel two shares and the other children George, John, Abigail, Mary, Jane, Dorothy and Martha, one share each. Abigail had already had £20: 6: 7 from her father and Mary York £11: 13: 0.

* *Records and Files*, VII: 866-875.

The widow Abigail Dutch died November 4, 1713, aged sixty-four, having had the services of Dr. Wallis, Dr. Bridgham and Dr. Dean (Dane) in her last illness. The homestead was then reappraised at £132, on January 11, 1713/4, and as it could not be conveniently divided it was all settled on Samuel. Quitclaims to Samuel from John Dutch of Boston, mariner, David and Jane Symonds and Martha Dutch are on file, as well as the receipts of George Dutch and Dorothy Dutch.*

Children, born in Ipswich:

11. i. SAMUEL, b. Nov. 3, 1674.
- ii. GEORGE; administration on his estate was granted to John Dutch of Boston, mariner, Oct. 25, 1729.†
- iii. ABIGAIL, b. Nov. 8, 1677; living and probably married, as she had received her portion, when her father died in 1712, but to whom?
12. iv. JOHN.
- v. MARY, b. May 13, 1680; m. Samuel York of Gloucester Feb. 21, 1705.
- vi. JANE, b. Aug. 14, 1685; m., int. Nov. 10, 1709, David Symonds.
- vii. DOROTHY, a deaf-mute; for £15: 16: 9 she acquitted Mr. Joseph Bolls, administrator of her brother Samuel's estate, of all claims against the estates of her father and brother;‡ d. in Ipswich, unmarried, Aug. 22, 1722.
- viii. MARTHA; unmarried in 1715; m. (1) int. Oct. 31, 1719, Michael Cressey of Rowley; m. (2) in Rowley Mar. 5, 1727/8, John Bridges of Littleton.

8. BENJAMIN³ DUTCH (*Robert*,² *Osmund*¹) was born in Ipswich December 4, 1665. He was a coast-wise mariner as were so many others of his family. He married Elizabeth Baker, daughter of John and Katherine (Perkins) Baker, June 30, 1690.

Bound to sea, he made his will March 25, 1692, but it was not proved until July 8, 1695. He left all his estate to his wife Elizabeth, but if she should have a child begotten by him, one-half of his property should go to the child when it came of age. If his wife had no such child, she was to dispose of half of the property by will to his brothers' children, the other half to her own heirs. She was named sole executrix, the witnesses being Nathaniel Knowlton and Mary Pierce. The house and homestead, which Benjamin had inherited from his father, were valued at £60 in the inventory, other interesting items being a silver beaker, a gold ring, a chest with drawers and a case of drams (a liquor chest).§

Widow Elizabeth Dutch married John Appleton of Ipswich, int. August 31, 1700.

* Essex Probate, 310: 333, 361, 499, 500; 311: 77, 88; 312: 432-4, 453.

† Essex Probate, 318: 35.

‡ Essex Probate, 313: 30.

§ Essex Probate, 305: 55, 56.

Children, born in Ipswich :

- i. ELIZABETH, b. Sept. 20, d. Oct. 2, 1692.
- ii. ELIZABETH, b. Sept. 14, 1693; m., int. Nov. 20, 1714, Benjamin Studley. Stating her descent from Osmund Dutch, she sold her interest in his estate to Epes Sargent July 23, 1730.*

9. BENJAMIN⁴ DUTCH (*John*,³ *Robert*,² *Osmund*¹) was born in Ipswich August 9, 1680. He was the first man of the family to reject a sea-faring career and became a sadler and later an inn-keeper in his native town. His first inn, licensed in 1719, was called "The White Boy." Later he took over Stephen Cross's inn "The Orange Tree," transferring his license to the dwelling which he built on north Main street in 1724. In 1741 he subscribed £100 to the Land Bank and later paid numerous assessments to this doubtful institution.

Dutch married Sarah Cross January 7, 1702. She died August 7 (or July 31, by her gravestone), 1748, aged sixty-eight. He married, secondly, December 25, 1749, widow Mary Brown, who made a will leaving him her dwelling-house for his natural life, five days before the wedding.† She died before him, however, on June 23, 1757. He died November 13, 1760, aged eighty. Administration on his estate was granted to his son Nathaniel on December 6, 1762.‡

Children, born in Ipswich :

- i. SARAH; m. Capt. Daniel Tilton, int. Nov. 20, 1725. (*See Tilton.*)
- ii. NATHANIEL, b. Mar. 24, 1705/6; d. April 7, 1707.
- iii. ELIZABETH; d. Nov. 21, 1721.
- iv. HANNAH, bapt. April 13, 1713; d. young.
- v. NATHANIEL, bapt. May 30, 1714; m., int. Mar. 31, 1750, Sarah Haskell, who d. Mar. 15 or 18, 1799, of "universal decay"; he d. Aug. 28, 1795, aged 81. Administration on his estate was granted to the widow, Jonathan Ingersoll and Thomas Knowlton sureties, October 6, 1796. The estate was insolvent.§ He was a cabinet-maker and lived in Ipswich.

Children, recorded in Ipswich :

1. *Sarah*, bapt. Sept. 22, 1751; m. Nov. 10, 1774, Asa Warner.
2. *Nathaniel*, bapt. Nov. 5, 1752; m. (1) Elizabeth Dodge Dec. 25, 1796; m. (2), int. Mar. 17, 1808, Lydia Cook of Beverly; d. Oct. 20, 1836, aged 84.
3. *Stephen*, bapt. June 8, 1755; m. Feb. 18, 1779, Mary Rogers.
4. *Elizabeth*, bapt. March 11, 1759.
5. *Martha*, bapt. Oct. 11, 1761; d. unmarried July 9, 1806.
6. *Daniel*, bapt. Sept. 8, 1765; m. (1) Sept. 18, 1786, Sarah

* Essex Deeds. 54: 213.

† Essex Probate. No. 3713.

‡ Essex Probate. 340: 158, 441, 445.

§ Essex Probate. 364: 172, 252.

Dodge, daughter of Col. Isaac Dodge, who d. Feb. 7, 1808, aged 42 (gravestone); m. (2) Sept. 27, 1808, widow Lucy (Lord) Staniford, who d. June 27, 1847, aged 81.

7. *Benjamin*, bapt. May 26, 1771.

vi. STEPHEN, bapt. April 15, 1716; d. Oct. 27, 1721.

vii. BENJAMIN, bapt. Oct. 25, 1719; m. int. Nov. 29, 1746, Sarah Day; d. in Bradford Nov. 12, 1803, aged 82.

Children, recorded in Ipswich:

1. *John*, bapt. Nov. 15, 1747; m., int. Oct. 13, 1770, Mary Calef; sea-captain and prize-master in the Revolution.

2. *Sarah*, bapt. Nov. 19, 1749; m. (1) Nov. 2, 1769, Nathaniel Perley; m. (2) Lieut. Samuel Bacon of Bradford; d. May 3, 1819, aged 69.

3. *Rev. Ebenezer*, bapt. Mar. 29, 1752; ordained minister of the Second Parish of Bradford Nov. 17, 1779; m. (1) at Rowley Aug. 18, 1780, Mehitable Mighill, who d. in Bradford Dec. 29, 1794, aged 33; m. (2) at Haverhill Feb. 15, 1798, Phebe Eaton; d. Aug. 4, 1813, aged 62, and his widow m. Dec. 17, 1815, Maj. Earl Clapp of Woodstock, Conn.

4. *Eunice*, bapt. May 5, 1754; m. Feb. 4, 1773, Ebenezer Hovey.

5. *Benjamin*, bapt. June 6, 1756.

6. *Lucy*, bapt. April 23, 1758; d. young.

7. *Daniel*, bapt. June 22, 1760.

8. *Lucy*, bapt. June 26, 1763; d. young.

9. *Susanna*, bapt. May 20, 1768; m. at Bradford June 15, 1791, Moses Savory.

10. *Lucy*, bapt. Nov. 17, 1771; m. at Bradford June 24, 1792, Benjamin Greenough.

viii. HANNAH, bapt. June 4, 1721; m. Nov. 9, 1739, Mark Haskell; d. May 13, 1783, aged 62 (gravestone).

10. ROBERT⁴ DUTCH (*Robert*,³ *Robert*,² *Osmund*¹) was born in Ipswich January 2, 1692. On January 14, 1716, he took out administration *de bonis non* on the estate of his grandfather, Robert Dutch, in order to take care of "an old Common Right or Commonage in ye Town of Ipswich" undisposed of in the will of the said deceased. His sureties were Alexander Lovell, his uncle, and John Baker, his brother-in-law.* On December 13, 1717, calling himself "of Exeter," he sold all rights in Ipswich commonage to John Dennis and Benjamin Studley.†

On January 7, 1719/20, at Greenland, New Hampshire, he was married to Elizabeth King by Rev. William Allen. On March 5, 1721/2, he witnessed two Kittery deeds, Spinney to Spinney,‡ and that is the last trace of him thusfar found. He may have been

* Essex Probate, 312: 7.

† Essex Deeds, 37: 64.

‡ York Deeds, XI: 151, 178.

the ancestor of some of the five men named Dutch who were living in New Hampshire when the Census of 1790 was taken.

11. SAMUEL⁴ DUTCH (*Samuel*,³ *Robert*,² *Osmund*¹) was born in Ipswich November 3, 1674. He married Prudence Wardwell, int. December 19, 1702. He died March 16, 1718/9. He was a mariner in the coasting trade.

Samuel Dutch bought land and buildings in Exeter, New Hampshire, on September 15, 1708.

Administration on the insolvent estate of Samuel Dutch of Ipswich was granted to Joseph Bowles in December, 1719, and an inventory entered March 9, 1720/1. The widow Prudence quit-claimed her interest in the estate to the administrator on November 8, 1723. The mansion house, shop and land were valued at £40 and a "punch bole" at 6s.*

Children:

- i. SAMUEL. His grandfather, Elihu Wardwell, deeded him eight rods next to his dwelling-house, in payment for services, Nov. 20, 1716.† He m. (1), int. Sept. 2, 1721, Hannah Annable who d. Sept. 29, 1736; m. (2) May 24, 1737, Mehitable Northend of Rowley; m. (3), int. Jan. 23, 1741, Mary Fowler; d. Feb. 3, 1753, in Ipswich. Administration on his estate was granted to his widow, Mary Dutch, April 23, 1753. She married James Pitts July 24, 1754, and as Mary Dutch, *alias* Pitts, she rendered an account Nov. 8, 1759. She was allowed expenses of lying-in after her husband's death and of bringing up two children. The sons Samuel and John were empowered to sell their father's estate July 27, 1767.‡

Children, by third wife:

1. *Samuel*, bapt. with the following three Dec. 27, 1747. Joseph Fowler was appointed his and his brother's guardian in Jan., 1760. He m. in Danvers Sept. 3, 1770, Hannah Woodbury of Beverly who d. in Feb., 1833. He d. in Danvers in April, 1811.
 2. *John*; of Salem when he m. Fanny Jones of Danvers in April, 1770. He was a baker in Salem, with a store on the corner of Essex and Summer streets. They had fourteen children recorded in Salem. She d. Aug. 8, 1828; he d. in Aug., 1836, aged 91.
 3. *Mehitable*; m. in Danvers Oct. 8, 1772, Simon Pinder.
 4. *Mary*; d. young.
 5. *Mary* (posthumous), bapt. May 20, 1753; m. April 1, 1773, Charles Hall of Marblehead.
- ii. ABIGAIL; m., int. Nov. 30, 1723, Daniel Chapman.
 - iii. GEORGE, bapt. March 23, 1712; m. April 21, 1736, Sarah Abbot. On March 25, 1746, George Dutch, cordwainer, and wife Sarah of Ipswich, sold their dwelling-house, barn and land in Ipswich

* Essex Probate, No. 8422.

† Essex Deeds, 30: 150.

‡ Essex Probate, 331: 298; 336: 423, 519; 344: 113.

to Arthur Abbot.* They moved to Exeter, New Hampshire, where he was still living in 1762, although two deeds in 1758 and 1761 give his residence as Newmarket, possibly the result of changing town boundaries.

Children:

1. *George*, b. in Ipswich May 29, 1737.
2. *John*, bapt. in Ipswich April 20, 1740; d. young.
3. *John*, bapt. in Ipswich April 25, 1742; d. young.
4. *Abigail*, bapt. in Exeter, as were the following, March 25, 1744.
5. *Mary*, bapt. July 20, 1746.
6. *Betty*, bapt. July 29, 1750.
7. *Samuel*, bapt. Dec. 24, 1752.
8. *John*, bapt. Sept. 14, 1755.
9. *Sarah*, bapt. June 10, 1759.

12. JOHN⁴ DUTCH (*Samuel*,³ *Robert*,² *Osmund*¹) was a Boston mariner and in that town he was married on December 20, 1711, to Elizabeth Harris by Rev. Benjamin Colman. He quit-claimed his share in his father's lands to his brother Samuel in 1714, and in 1729 acted as administrator of his brother George's estate.

His will, made August 27, 1733, when he was very sick and weak, was proved on the following February 26. He left £10 apiece to his loving children Elizabeth Lakeman, wife of John Lakeman of Boston, joiner, Abigail, Hannah and Mary Dutch. All of the remainder went to his wife Elizabeth and she and his respected friend John Staniford were appointed executors. The witnesses were Richard Crowninshield, Henry Downe and Jacob Sheafe. The inventory of Capt. John Dutch, taken by Daniel Loring, John Staniford and John Stimpson March 19, 1733, discloses a small estate but some articles of luxury. The widow entered her final account on August 27, 1734.†

Children, born in Boston:

- i. HARRIS, b. Aug. 23, 1712; d. *s.p.* before 1733.
- ii. ELIZABETH, b. Feb. 5, 1713; m. Mar. 23, 1731, John Lakeman.
- iii. ABIGAIL, b. May 29, 1716; m. Oct. 11, 1735, Joseph Davis.
- iv. HANNAH; m. Feb. 14, 1739, John Wise.
- v. MARY; living in 1733.

* Essex Deeds, 91: 45.

† Suffolk Probate, 30: 159, 160, 352.

VII
KIMBALL, OF IPSWICH

KIMBALL

RICHARD KIMBALL was born about 1595, presumably in some parish near Rattlesden, co. Suffolk, England. The family of Kymbould, Kembold or Kemball was numerous at Hitcham near Rattlesden in the sixteenth century, but Richard Kemball's baptism is not found in the parish register, nor is that of his brother Henry Kemball. It is only after its translation to New England that the family name became Kimball. Richard Kemball married Ursula Scott of Rattlesden about 1614 and they had a child baptized in her parish in 1615. Very probably their second child was that Abigail, daughter of Richard Kemball, baptized at Hitcham in 1617, but where the six younger children whom their parents brought to New England were baptized has not been discovered.

When Richard and Ursula Kemball sailed for America in the *Elizabeth* of Ipswich in 1634 their home was stated to be Rattlesden. With them were Martha Scott, Ursula's mother, Thomas Scott, her brother, and his family, and Henry Kemball, Richard's brother, and his family. The Scotts were Rattlesden people and Henry Kemball is also listed as from that village. On the list Richard's age is given as thirty-nine, while the children were Henry, fifteen (probably a mistaken reading of eighteen), Elizabeth thirteen, Richard eleven, Mary nine, Martha five, John three, and the baby, Thomas, one. It was a heavy expense and no light responsibility to embark on a long voyage with such a brood.

After they landed both of the Kemball families went to Watertown, where Richard Kemball was made a freeman on May 6, 1635, and where he was a proprietor in 1636/7. By the latter part of 1637, however, he had moved his family to Ipswich where he had been granted a house lot at the west end of the town. He was an Ipswich commoner in 1641 and a subscriber to the salary of the military commander, Major Denison, in 1648. His farm was in the northern part of the town near Prospect Hill. By trade he was a wheelwright.

Either he or his son Richard, of Wenham, was on Essex county trial juries in 1658 and 1667, and grand juries of 1661, 1664, 1668 and 1669. He was seldom in legal difficulties, there being record of a few suits for debt in which he was plaintiff or defendant and three or four actions of various types against Richard Shatswell, none of which produce information of interest.

After the death of his wife Ursula, Kemball married on Octo-

ber 23, 1661, widow Margaret (Cole) Dow of Hampton. He died in Ipswich June 22, 1675, and she survived only until March 1, 1675/6. Administration on her estate was granted to her sons Daniel Dow and Thomas Dow on March 4, 1675/6. There were £40 due her by her marriage contract.*

Richard Kimball, sr., of Ipswich made his will on March 5, 1674/5, and it was proved September 28, 1675. He directed that his wife should live in his house, have the improvement of the land belonging thereto and the increase in the stock for a year after his decease. At the end of the year the £40 due her and the goods she brought to their marriage were to be paid to her. After that she was to have the parlor end of the house to live in, a part of the cellar, one cow, firewood and a quarter of the fruit of the orchard, but if she desired to move to her own house she was "to be sett in itt" by the executors and allowed 40s. a year for life. To his eldest son Henry, £90. To his son Richard, £40. To his son John, £20. To his son Thomas, £25, and to his children £7 divided equally among them as they came of age. To his son Benjamin beside two oxen already given him, £25, and to his children £6 to be divided equally among them as they married or came of age. To his son Caleb, land known as Ting's lot, land at Wattle's neck, marsh known as Wiat's marsh and working tools except two axes. To Caleb's children, £14 to be divided equally as they married or came of age. To his son-in-law John Severance, £10. To his daughter Mary £10. To his daughter Sarah, £40, and to her children £7:10:0 as they married or came of age. Also to Sarah, the bed he lay on with its furnishings. To his wife's children Thomas and Mary, 40s. each, and to Jeremiah, £15. To the two eldest daughters of Giles Cowes that he had by his first wife (the testator's great-granddaughters), £8 to be equally divided when they reached sixteen. To his cousin Haniell Bosworth, £4. Executors: his sons Richard and John Kimball. Overseer: cousin Haniell Bosworth. Witnesses: Moses Pengry, sr., Aaron Pengry, sr. The homestead was worth £200 and there was a good stock of animals, utensils, furnishings and linen, the total value being £737.†

Children:

- i. HENRY, bapt. in Rattlesden Aug. 12, 1615; m. (1) Mary Wyatt; m. (2) Elizabeth, widow of William Rayner.
- ii. ABIGAIL; possibly bapt. Nov. 5, 1617, at Hitcham, co. Suffolk. She was left in England when her family emigrated, possibly already

* *Probate Records of Essex County*, III: 46.

† *Probate Records of Essex County*, III: 16.

- married to John Severance, with whom she came to New England by 1636.
- iii. ELIZABETH; d. before her father made his will, probably unmarried.
 - iv. RICHARD; m. (1) Mary (Cooley?); m. (2) Mary Gott, widow of Charles Gott.
 - v. MARY; m. Robert Dutch. (*See Dutch.*)
 - vi. MARTHA; m. Joseph Fowler.
 - vii. JOHN; m. Mary Bradstreet.
 - viii. THOMAS; m. Mary Smith; killed by Indians in Bradford May 3, 1676.
 - ix. SARAH; m. Nov. 24, 1658, Edward Allen.
 - x. BENJAMIN; m. Mercy Hazeltine.
 - xi. CALEB; m. Nov. 7, 1660, Anna Hazeltine.

VIII
SCOTT, OF IPSWICH

SCOTT

1. EDMUND SCOTT appears in the parish records of Rattlesden, co. Suffolk, for the first time in 1567, when he brought a child to baptism. He was a "questman," a parish officer, in 1569. As the baptisms of his two eldest children are not in the register, which begins in 1558, he probably came to Rattlesden from another parish. He was church warden in 1588-1589, and collector in 1593 and 1611.*

Joan Scott, his wife, whom he may have married about 1560, was buried in Rattlesden May 15, 1615, "an old woman." He was buried in Rattlesden August 14, 1621, aged "about ninety-seven years," possibly an exaggeration.

Children:

- i. EDMUND; m. at Rattlesden Sept. 16, 1583, Agnes Losse; buried there July 14, 1642.
2. ii. HENRY.
- iii. DINAY, bapt. in Rattlesden June 18, 1567; m. Jan. 8, 1587/8, John Ransone.
- iv. ANNE, bapt. in Rattlesden Aug. 21, 1569.
- v. ROSE, bapt. in Rattlesden Sept. 15, buried Sept. 19, 1571.
- vi. GEORGE, bapt. in Rattlesden Jan. 31, 1573/4.
- vii. NICHOLAS, bapt. in Rattlesden June 13, 1576; m. April 7, 1603, Anne Batman.

2. HENRY² SCOTT (*Edmund*¹) was probably born about the year 1565. He married in Rattlesden July 25, 1594, Martha Whatlock, daughter of Thomas and Joan Whatlock, who had been baptized in that parish July 18, 1568. Scott was buried in Rattlesden December 24, 1624.

Robert Whatlock of Rattlesden, Martha (Whatlock) Scott's brother, made his will September 20, 1622, and it was proved October 8, 1622. He was apparently unmarried. To my kinsman Thomas Skott of Rattlesden, glover. To my sister Martha Skott. To my kinswoman Ursula Kemball. To my kinswoman Ellen Usher. To Andrew Bartholomew, Andrew Fordham of Rattlesden, Elizabeth Bell, Prudence Webb. To my kinsman Roger Skott at one and twenty years of age. The house in Norfolk my brother Roger Whatlock gave me. Peter Devereux, minister of Rattlesden.†

The will of Henry Scott of Rattlesden, yeoman, was made September 24, 1623, and proved January 10, 1624. To his wife Martha he left the house in which he dwelt for the term of her life,

* See *The Pillsbury Ancestry*, Mary Lovering Holman, 1938, I: 81.

† Consistory Court of Norwich, Bradstreet, L. 125.

after which it was to go to his son Roger and his heirs forever. To his grandchild Abigail Kemball, 40s. at the age of twenty-one. To his grandchildren Henry, Elizabeth and Richard Kemball, 20s. each at the age of twenty-one. To Thomas Skott, £5 within one year of his decease. To Mr. Peter Devereux, minister of Rattlesden, 10s. Executrix: wife Martha.*

Ten years after her husband's death Martha Scott set sail for America with her son Thomas Scott and her daughter Ursula Kemball and ten grandchildren of all ages from a boy of eighteen to a baby of one. This family group embarked on the *Elizabeth* of Ipswich the last of April in 1634, the adults taking the Oath of Allegiance at the Ipswich Customs House before sailing. Martha Scott's age is given on the list as sixty although she was actually aged sixty-six. The Scotts and Kemballs settled in Ipswich after a short stay in the Boston neighborhood, and there, presumably, Martha Scott died, there being no record.

Children, baptized at Rattlesden:

3. i. THOMAS, bapt. Feb. 26, 1594/5.
- ii. URSULA, bapt. Feb. 14, 1596/7; m. Richard Kemball. (*See Kimball.*)
- iii. ROGER, bapt. Nov. 5, 1604; m. Feb. 26, 1627/8, Sarah Grimwood; d. after 1638.

Children, baptized in Rattlesden:

1. Susan, bapt. June 6, 1632.
2. Roger, bapt. May 21, 1633. Did he follow his uncle Thomas to Ipswich, where a Roger Skot took the Oath of Allegiance in 1678?
3. Sarah, bapt. March 4, 1635.
4. Abigail, bapt. Nov. 26, 1637.
5. John, bapt. March 20, 1639.

3. THOMAS³ SCOTT (*Henry*,² *Edmund*¹) was baptized in Rattlesden on February 26, 1594/5. He married there on July 20, 1620, Elizabeth Strutt. With her and their three children, his mother and his sister Ursula Kemball's family, he came to New England in 1634, having crossed the Atlantic in the *Elizabeth* from Ipswich in Old England. After a short stay in Cambridge he settled in Ipswich, where he was granted a house-lot in 1635.

Scott took the Freeman's Oath on March 4, 1634/5. He was selectman of Ipswich in 1636/7, constable in 1641, served on grand juries in 1645, 1648 and 1651, and on trial juries in 1647, 1649 and 1653. The town of Ipswich sued him for debt in 1646, and he was one of Major Denison's subscribers in 1648. He was a glover by trade.

* Bury St. Edmund Wills, Pearle, L. 117.

Gov. Winthrop tells of one Scott and Eliot of Ipswich who "were lost in their way home and wandered up and down six days and eat nothing. At length they were found by an Indian being almost senseless from want of rest." These were the hazards of land travel in the forests of Essex county in the early seventeenth century.

The will of Thomas Scott of Ipswich was made March 8, 1653/4, and proved March 28, 1654. To his daughters Elizabeth and Abigail he left £25 each, half to be paid within half a year of his decease and the rest within a year. To his daughters Hannah, Sarah and Mary, £25 each, to be paid when they reached the age of twenty-one, but, if they married before that age, one-half was to be paid on their marriage days. Residue to son Thomas. Executors: brother Richard Kembell, Thomas Rowlinson, sr., Edmund Bridges. The inventory of £318 lists three books, much cloth and pewter and the house, barn and land. The legacies of Sarah and Mary Scott were paid to Mr. Ezekiel Rogers for them in 1661 and 1663, and Haniell Bosworth receipted for that of his wife Abigail in 1663.*

Children:

- i. ELIZABETH, bapt. in Rattlesden Nov. 18, 1623; m. John Spofford of Rowley.
- ii. ABIGAIL, bapt. in Rattlesden March 5, 1625; m. Haniell Bosworth of Ipswich.
- iii. THOMAS, bapt. in Rattlesden June 15, 1628; m. Margaret Hubbard, sister of Rev. William Hubbard of Ipswich, author of *History of New England* and *A Narrative of Troubles with the Indians*. He died in Ipswich Sept. 6, 1657. His widow Margaret m. secondly Ezekiel Rogers, son of Rev. Ezekiel Rogers of Rowley, and died, his widow, in Boston in 1678.

For going into the woods, singing and shouting, and taking liquor with them, at an unseasonable hour, he and several other young men were in court in 1649. His punishment was to learn Mr. Norton's catechism before the next court which he failed to do.† He was of Stamford "in the jurisdiction of New Haven" in 1654 when he conveyed to Kimball and Bridges, his father's executors, all of his father's real and personal property, to be divided according to the will.‡ Kimball sold the land, a fifty acre grant in Ipswich, to Twyford West Jan. 31, 1654/5.§

Administration on the estate of Thomas Scott was granted to his wife Margaret on Sept. 29, 1657. It was small, containing no real estate, and was insolvent.|| Thomas Patch and Abigail Bosworth on Sept. 25, 1683, petitioned for administration on the estate of their brother Thomas Scott, deceased.

* *Probate Records of Essex County*, I: 168-170; Historical Collections of the Essex Institute, IV: 25-27.

† *Records and Files*, I: 178.

‡ *Records and Files*, III: 96.

§ Ipswich Deeds, I: 160.

|| *Probate Records of Essex County*, I: 258.

Margaret Rogers made her will in Boston on June 22, 1678. Her estate in Ipswich was bound to make good £200 to her children and, when it was cleared of that obligation, £40 from it was to be given to her son and daughter Snelling's two children. Her estate in Boston was to be divided among her children. The estate of her son Thomas Scott of which she was executrix she left to her own executrix to be disposed of in accordance with Thomas's will. Executors: her daughter Martha Rogers and Capt. John Whipple. Overseers: Daniel Stone, Daniel Turel, sr., Thomas Cheevers. Both executors declined the trust on September 17, 1678, but Capt. Whipple accepted administration on the same day. After his death Mrs. Martha Rogers was appointed on February 6, 1683. The Boston property was worth £143 and that at Ipswich £266.*

On January 9, 1694, William Rogers addressed a petition to the Probate Court saying: "Thomas Scott my Grandfather dyed in Ipswich about thirty and eight yers agoe . . . he left my Grandmother with onely two Children viz margerett Scott my mother and thomas Scott . . . my sd uncle thomas Scott went into old England and dyed ther . . . when I was about four yers old my mother dyed and in a short time after my Grandmother about sixteen yers agoe . . . my sd Grandfather dyed seized of agood Considerable estat in land in Ipswich . . . I am the onely surviving person descended from my sd Grandfather and now I am come to the age of twenty one yers doe humly Crave that your Honnour will Grant administration to me of the estat of my sd Grandfather that hath not bien leagally disposed of."

Children:

1. *Margaret*; m. (1) William Rogers, merchant, of Boston; m. (2) by Jan. 30, 1676/7, William Snelling of Boston.
2. *Thomas*; "went into old England and dyed ther"; his mother had been executrix of his estate when she made her will in 1678.
3. *Mary*, b. March 24, 1657; d. April 1, 1658.
- iv. BENJAMIN, bapt. at Rattlesden Feb. 3, 1630, and buried there Aug. 30, 1633.
- v. HANNAH; unmarried in 1653/4; m. Edmund Lockwood of Stamford.
- vi. SARAH; unmarried in 1653/4.
- vii. MARY; unmarried in 1653/4; m. Thomas Patch of Wenham.

* Suffolk Probate, No. 983½.

IX

ROPER, OF HAMPTON AND IPSWICH

ROPER

WALTER ROPER, by his estimated age in five depositions, was born between the years 1611 and 1614, and his wife Susan, who was "about 53" in 1669, was therefore born about 1616. They came to New England before 1641 and settled in Hampton where Roper was a proprietor in that year. He was a carpenter by trade. He took the Freeman's Oath in Boston on May 13, 1642, was a selectman of Hampton in 1644 and had a share in the town commons in 1646. By 1647 he had sold his Hampton house and land to Robert Sayers or Sayward and taken his family to live in Ipswich.

He owned land in the neighboring town of Topsfield in 1651, and on September 3, 1652, he bought the house and land of Allen Perley in Ipswich, later owned by his son John Roper to whom succeeded Walter Roper's grandson, Benjamin Dutch.*

Roper served on the Essex County grand juries in 1645, 1649, 1671 and 1676, and on trial juries in 1649, 1663, 1666, 1669, 1670, 1673 and 1675. He sued John Peckeram for slander but lost the case, in 1649. In 1664 he accused Samuel Hunt of mutiny when the officers ordered the men to clear the Wolfpen plain for the exercise of the regiment. He was released from training in 1677, paying the company a bushel of Indian corn each year, and unconditionally released in 1680.

In the testimony in a law-suit it was stated that Walter Roper, after moving to Ipswich, "often came to Hampton to see his brethren and friends."† Possibly these were "brethren in the Lord," but they may well have been relations by blood or marriage. In 1661, fourteen years after Roper had left Hampton, Joseph Palmer, a Hampton boy, chose his brother Christopher Palmer and Walter Roper for his guardians, which would seem to indicate some kinship. William Palmer, father of Christopher and Joseph, came to Hampton from Ormesby St. Margaret, co. Norfolk. Also, on March 22, 1663/4, Ruth Dalton, widow of Rev. Timothy Dalton of Hampton, made an indenture settling her property. After her death payments were to be made each year for nine years to certain specified persons, most of whom were related to her in some degree. In the ninth year £5 was to be paid to Walter Roper of Ipswich or his heirs. Either Mrs. Dalton, who was probably born a Parkhurst, or Mr. Dalton may have been related to Roper.

* Ipswich Deeds, 2: 44.

† Supreme Judicial Court, No. 17706.

Roper died in Ipswich "the later end of July," 1680. His will, made July 15, was proved September 28, 1680. He gave his wife her bed, the "grat beed" of his inventory, and directed that his son John should maintain her conveniently and comfortably in diet and clothes in the room "she now lodgeth in which is the parler." If she did not like this way of living, John, who inherited the house, was to share with her the household goods and maintain for her a cow, four sheep and a hog yearly, provide her with firewood and a horse and pay her £3 a year in wheat, malt and Indian corn. If she remarried John was to pay her £4 a year and be free of the former "pertikelers." To son Nathaniel, four acres of marsh bought of Nehemiah Jewett or £20 after his mother's death, also half the carpenter's tools. To son Nathaniel £4, to daughter Mary £5, to daughter Elizabeth £5 and to daughter Sarah £10, one half to be paid within a year of his wife's death and the other half four years after her death. To grandchildren Elizabeth Sparks £5, Susan, Margaret, Rose and Sarah Sparks 20s. each, John Sparks and John Dutch 40s. each, Elizabeth and Susan Dutch 20s. each, all to be paid when they should be twenty-one. Executor: son John. Overseers: friends John Denison, sr., John Brewer, sr., John Whipple, sr., who were also witnesses. The inventory of house, land, simple furnishings and tools amounted to £191.*

Children:

- i. MARY, bapt. in Hampton Aug. 22, 1641; m. John Sparks.
- ii. SARAH, b. about 1645. She was a servant in the family of Major-Gen. Denison in Ipswich by 1661, and partly at the instigation of Mary, wife of Job Bishop, but mostly, alas, through her own tendency to be light-fingered, she managed in a few years to abstract from her mistress's wardrobe and household an extraordinary amount of clothing, linen and food. By 1665 she was paying the just penalty.† In 1670 she was again under suspicion. Elizabeth Hunt's child dropped a bodkin in the meeting-house during service and Sarah Roper, accused of picking it up and concealing it, claimed that it had fallen without her knowledge into the cuff of her sleeve. She returned it the following day through her sister "Betty" Dutch. The record contains much colorful testimony. Goodwife Hunt, who said that the Ropers were "high-spirited folkes," had gone to consult Major-Gen. Denison but he would have nothing to do with the case "as he had been concerned with Sarah Roper before," adding "my wife is afraid of her." This time the magistrate found nothing more serious than "suspicion" against Sarah.‡
- iii. ELIZABETH, b. about 1648 (22 in 1670); m. before 1670 John Dutch. (See Dutch.)

* *Probate Records of Essex County*, III: 388.

† *Records and Files*, III: 244-6.

‡ *Records and Files*, IV: 239-242.

- iv. JOHN, b. about 1650; m. Anne Caldwell who d., his widow, Sept. 4, 1721, aged 60 years, 14 days (gravestone); d. *s.p.* Nov. 27, 1709, in his 60th year (gravestone).

The will of John Roper of Ipswich, made Nov. 22, 1709, was proved Dec. 12, 1709. To his wife Anna he left his entire estate during her widowhood. She might sell, if need be, the salt marsh his father had bought from Mr. Jewett and tillage land bought from Thomas and Jeremiah Dow. She was to seek advice of Sergt. Thomas Hart, Nathaniel Knowlton and her brother Dillingham Caldwell. To his cousin Benjamin Dutch, the salt marsh bought from John Pengry. To sister Sparks and cousins Susanna Annable, Margaret White, Rose Newman, Sarah Newman, Susanna Kinsman £20 each, Hannah Fellows £25. To cousins (his wife's nieces) Sarah Caldwell and Mary Foster, 40s. each. Executrix: his wife. Witnesses: Dillingham Caldwell, John Gamage, Nathaniel Knowlton.*

- v. NATHANIEL, b. about 1653 (21 in 1674); d. *s.p.* in 1685. On Sept. 29, 1685, Samuel Bishop, aged 40, and Jacob Perkins, aged 23, testified that about the middle of March last past, on board Bishop's sloop bound for Barbadoes, lying in Ipswich harbor, Nathaniel Roper, going as one of the men, called the deponents forward and told them that if it pleased God that he never came back again his brother John Roper should have his estate, pay his debts and give his cousin Nathaniel Dutch (John Dutch, his son) £10. The inventory included a small house, a little furniture, his clothes and a Bible, worth £53 in all.†
- vi. BENJAMIN; "slaine in the warr" Sept. 18, 1675, *s.p.* He was one of the "flower of Essex" under Capt. Lathrop, who fell into ambush at Bloody Brook in King Philip's war, "that most fatal day, the saddest that ever befel New England."

* Essex Probate, 310: 169.

† Essex Probate, 304: 144.

X
CROSS, OF IPSWICH

CROSS

1. ROBERT CROSS and Anna Jordan were married on August 20, 1635, presumably in Ipswich where the bride's family had settled a few months before.* Anna Cross died in Ipswich on Oct. 29, 1677, and Robert married a second wife, Mary ——. If she was, as seems probable, the Mary Cross, aged about twenty-seven, who testified in *Derby v. Dutch* in 1680, she was young enough to be his daughter. They were both living in 1694. Robert Cross was born about 1613, his age being estimated twice in 1668 as about fifty-five, and in 1675 as about sixty-three.

Cross had a grant of six acres, adjoining the land of his father-in-law Stephen Jordan, in 1635 and by 1638 he had built a house on it. In the spring of 1637 he was one of the young men of Ipswich, seventeen in number, who saw service as soldiers in the Pequot war. The war lasted six months and the men were paid at the rate of 20s. a month. In 1639 the town granted them small lots of marsh-land as a bonus.

On March 19, 1649/50, Robert Cross moved his family to a farm of forty acres, in the southern part of Ipswich called Chebacco, which he had bought from John Burnham. The date is fixed by the testimony of his sons Robert and Stephen in a suit for trespass which he brought against four neighbors in 1663.† Bounds were uncertain, particularly in the marshes, and Cross was involved in several boundary disputes.

Cross was a commoner in 1641, subscribed to Major Denison's salary in 1648, was made freeman in 1658 and took the Oath of Allegiance in 1678.

He and his family were constantly in legal difficulties, and he seems to have developed an idea that the magistrates, particularly Major Denison, were prejudiced against him. Cross was "admonished for words" and Joseph Fowler was in court for "wicked and sinful speeches" against him in 1649, among Cross's witnesses being the wife and daughter of John Cross which may hint of a relationship to one who was a solid citizen.‡ He was sued by John Fuller in 1642 and sued Cornelius Waldo in 1651, in the civil side.

In 1664 Cross's daughter Martha, who was a servant of Thomas Bishop, got into trouble with one William Durkee. "In sore distress of mind in the Consideration as she Conseed she had binn cast out of her fathers favor and familee," she took

* *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 68: 202.

† *Records and Files*, III: 86-8.

‡ *Records and Files*, I: 168, 179.

refuge with her sister Elizabeth Nelson. Elizabeth consulted Goodman Story, saying "I dayer not goe to speack a word in her behalfe," and Story, literally a good man, offered to go with her to see her parents. "We found them," said Story, "in a sad and sorrowful condition, very much harried in spirit, not knowing which way to turn or what to say." Goodman Story advised marriage, and "that was the way then that we thought to be the best." Cross, however, could not let the situation end with this simple solution and sued Durkee for abusing his daughter. Durkee replied by suing Cross for withdrawing his consent to the marriage after giving it. Soon afterward, however, William and Martha were duly married.*

Cross had two servants, Nicholas Vauden and Lawrence Clinton. Vauden ran away in 1666, 1668 and 1670, when he added to his offense by stealing £7 belonging to his master. Each time he was pursued with hue and cry, captured and brought back, and in 1670 the miserable fellow was fined £40, which presumably could only be paid by work, branded with an "R" on the forehead and forced to wear an iron collar. Lawrence Clinton was a gay young blade who claimed to have rich and prominent connections in England. He courted Rachel Halfield, an aging Ipswich spinster, who bought off his time (three and a half years) from Cross for £21 and married him. Rachel's family sued Cross, accusing him of conniving with Clinton to secure the Halfield money, and won the case, which Cross appealed to the Court of Assistants. Cross won when the case was reviewed. Clinton soon deserted Rachel and departed for fresh pastures in Rhode Island and Connecticut. Rachel divorced him and ended her days as a poor old woman in a hut on an Ipswich island.†

By 1663 Robert Cross was saying that he could get no justice while the major (Denison) was on the bench, and, after his sons Robert and Stephen were in jail and in the stocks for their training-day misbehavior, he was more embittered. In 1668 he tried to convince Thomas Wells that the magistrates personally kept the court fines, and Wells testified that Cross said that Major Denison was not respected in the court at Boston, that there were more appeals from Ipswich court than from any court in the country and that "his sons were set in the stocks and punished for nothing." Cross came back by quoting Wells as saying that the Ipswich court was all one with the Inquisition in Spain and that "old Bradstreet was a worse usurer than Godfrey." Everybody

* *Records and Files*, III: 189-190.

† *Records and Files*, III: 371, 457.

was fined and bound to good behavior. Cross gained one point when he sued Wells for slander for saying that Cross was a "cheating knave," the court forcing Wells to make a public acknowledgment to clear Cross's good name.*

On March 17, 1685/6, Robert Cross conveyed the Chebacco farm to his sons Robert and Stephen, who were to pay his debts and funeral expenses. Apparently he was to continue to live on the farm for the rest of his life.† Capt. Stephen Cross, using his father as nominal plaintiff, sued John Burnham, jr., their Chebacco neighbor, in 1693 to recover a lot of marsh, the title to which was in dispute. Cross won a verdict but Burnham appealed the case successfully. There are forty-one papers on file in this appeal, some of the evidence going back to 1663. In one paper Robert Cross entered the date of his marriage and birthdays of his daughters Elizabeth Nelson, Mary Herrick and Martha Dirkye, all of whom testified. The appeal was heard May 21, 1695.‡

Robert and Mary Cross were both living in 1694 when they consented to a sale by Stephen Cross of one-half of the marsh called "Daffecdowndille" on the Chebacco river to Thomas Choate for £40.§ Both of them were presumably dead by December 4, 1710, when Stephen Herrick of Beverly, attorney for Mary Herrick of Preston and Ephraim Fellows and Anna, his wife, of Plainfield, both places in New London county, Connecticut, and both women daughters of Robert Cross, late of Ipswich, conveyed all their interest in his estate to William Butler of Ipswich.||

Children :

- i. ELIZABETH, b. Aug. 4, 1636; m. William Nelson. Aged about 52, she testified in 1688 that she, her brother Robert Cross and one of her sisters worked one season in their childhood "upon and about turneps."¶
- ii. MARY, b. June 14, 1640; m. in Beverly July 3, 1661, Ephraim Herrick; living in Preston, New London county, Conn., in 1710.
2. iii. ROBERT, b. about 1642.
- iv. MARTHA, b. March 15, 1643; m. Dec. 20, 1664, William Dirkye.
3. v. STEPHEN, b. about 1647.
- vi. ANNA, b. about 1651; m. (1) Thomas Marshall; m. (2) Ephraim Fellows. She was aged 21 and unmarried, at her father's house in 1671,** and Anna Marshall "at her father Crosses" in 1679.†† Her last Marshall child was born in 1682 and her first Fellows

* *Records and Files*, IV: 50, 66, 78-82.

† *Essex Deeds*, 10: 49.

‡ Supreme Judicial Court, No. 3138.

§ *Essex Deeds*, 11: 184.

|| *Essex Probate*, No. 6643.

¶ *Essex Deeds*, 8: 98.

** *Records and Files*, IV: 5.

†† *Records and Files*, VII: 258.

child in 1685. She was living in Plainfield, New London County, Conn., in 1710.

vii. SARAH, b. about 1656; m. Lieut. William Butler.

viii. RALPH, b. Feb. 15, 1658; d. young.

2. ROBERT² CROSS (*Robert*¹) was born, presumably in Ipswich, about 1642, that year being determined by his estimated age in many court depositions. He married Martha Tredwell on February 19, 1664/5. He died in 1713 and his widow died March 3, 1738/9, at the age of ninety-five.

In 1667, after a day spent in military training, Robert Cross, his cousin John Andrews, jr., and a few other young men, probably under the influence of too much "sack," or aqua-vitae, committed what the court with some justice termed a "barbarous and inhuman act." They opened the grave of the Indian sagamore of Agawam, who had been a constant friend of the first settlers of Ipswich, scattered his bones and carried his skull on a pole. Cross was apparently the ring-leader, and he was sentenced to jail until the next lecture day when he was to sit in the stocks for an hour after meeting, then to be taken back to prison to remain until he had paid a fine of £6: 13: 4. After his release he was bound to good behavior and obliged to bury the sagamore's bones and erect a cover of stones two feet high on the grave. The case naturally caused a great sensation, the mildest comment being that the fines and imprisonment punished the culprits' parents, who had to find the money and replace their labor, more than it did them.* Drink was Robert Cross's curse. He owned that he drank excessively in 1670, he was "much in drink" in Gloucester in September, 1671, again in Salem in 1673, and was fined for breach of the peace in 1677.

Cross seems to have been in the coasting trade, dealing in lumber. In 1673 he had sold 2000 feet of sawed boards to Ezekiel Needham of Lynn and sued for payment of £3 in goods and a pair of shoes, winning the case. His brother Stephen Cross, who testified against him, had guaranteed Needham against loss and damage and acknowledged a judgment which Needham obtained in 1676.† Robert won another case against Hugh March in 1677, receiving payment for 16,000 feet of merchantable pine boards which he had twice gone to Exeter to fetch.‡ John Lee sued him in 1680 for not delivering 3,160 feet of pine boards which he was to obtain at Lamperill river and deliver in Boston.§

* *Records and Files*, III: 400.

† *Records and Files*, V: 185.

‡ *Records and Files*, VI: 285.

§ *Records and Files*, VIII: 11.

In 1680 Cross leased land on "the little neck" and engaged in a continuous feud with the fishermen who were accustomed to use the beach there. There also, in 1686, he broke open the hut of an old shepherd, Capt. John Ayres, who kept the flock on the neck, and brutally assaulted him.

On August 29, 1694, he released to his brother Stephen all of his interest in the paternal farm at Chebacco, Stephen promising to acquit him of all obligations toward their father.*

On June 3, 1707, Robert Cross deeded his son Ralph Cross all his housing on "the little neck," on the south side of Jeffrey's neck where the grantor was then living, Ralph to enjoy two-thirds and to pay the grantor's son Nathaniel Cross one-third.†

Administration on the estate of Robert Cross of Ipswich was granted to Martha Cross, his widow, and Nathaniel Cross, his only son, Abraham Foster and James Foster being their sureties, on June 27, 1713. The small property was valued at £79 by Simon Wood and Thomas Hodgkins on July 3, 1713.‡

Children:

- i. ROBERT, b. Jan. 21, 1665; no further record.
- ii. THOMAS, b. Nov. 29, 1667. In order to explain an Ipswich family of Crosses which is obviously descended from Robert Cross it is necessary to provide a short life for this Thomas Cross although, thus far, no records have been found of it. He was, in all probability, the young Cross who about 1690 married Esther ———, who, as widow Esther Cross, married in Ipswich William Stone, int. Oct. 22, 1698.

Children:

1. *Esther*; m. int. Feb. 28, 1712, Samuel Howard.
2. *Thomas*, b. in 1695; m., int. Feb. 18, 1720/1, Sarah Boardman; d. in Bradford Nov. 22, 1772, in his 77th year, his widow dying five days later in her 70th year. Cross bought part of the Saltonstall-Cross-Dutch lot from Arthur Abbott in 1727 and sold it to John Leighton in 1732, when he bought land from Robert Potter and built a house, selling to George Dutch in 1735. He also sold land to James Foster in 1741 when he was about to move to Bradford.

Thomas Cross of Bradford, chairmaker, made his will Aug. 20, 1769, and it was proved Dec. 7, 1772. He left his estate to his wife, his daughters Sarah and Lucy, and his sons James, Thomas, Abiel, John, Ralph and Stephen.§ Abiel Cross of Salem, N. H., chairmaker, released his share in his father's estate to his brothers and sisters Thomas Cross of Bradford, chairmaker, Stephen and John Cross of Canterbury, N. H., chairmakers, Ralph Cross of Bow, N. H., shipwright,

* Essex Deeds, 10: 49.

† Essex Deeds, 19: 172.

‡ Essex Probate, No. 6511.

§ Essex Probate, 348: 442.

James Cross of Bradford, husbandman, Sarah Cross of Bradford, spinster, and Lucy Hazeltine, wife of Richard Hazeltine of Chester, N. H., on Dec. 25, 1772.*

Thomas and Sarah Cross's children, the first nine born in Ipswich and the last two in Bradford, were: Thomas, bapt. Dec. 3, 1721; Stephen, bapt. May 24, 1724; Sarah, bapt. March 20, 1725, d. April 18, 1736; John, bapt. Sept. 29, 1728; Esther, bapt. April 9, d. June 18, 1732; James, bapt. Aug. 26, 1733; Ralph, bapt. April 7, 1736; Sarah, bapt. Sept. 16, 1739; Thomas, bapt. Dec. 20, 1741; Abiel, b. April 8, 1744; Lucy, b. Nov. 16, 1746. The names Stephen, Esther, Ralph and Abiel make the origin of this family a practical certainty.

- iii. **MARTHA**, b. March 15, 1670; no further record.
- iv. **ABIAL**, b. April 5, 1676; possibly the Abial Cross who d. in Ipswich in May, 1752.
- v. **STEPHEN**, b. April 27, 1678; no further record.
- vi. **RALPH**; m. Nov. 6, 1705, Mary Graves. He had a seat assigned to him in the Ipswich meeting-house in 1702. On Aug. 17, 1712, administration on the estate of Ralph Cross of Ipswich, deceased, was granted to his widow Mary Cross and his brother-in-law Jacob Foster, who had married Martha Graves in 1709. The estate was very small indeed, only £39: 12: 03, but the inventory lists a silver spoon. In the account dated March 15, 1716/7, there is a charge for "bringing up 3 young Children." On Nov. 23, 1720, Ralph Cross, upward of 14, chose his uncle Jacob Foster his guardian, and Foster was appointed guardian of Stephen and Mary Cross, under 14.† The widow Mary Cross married William Brackenbury, int. Nov. 28, 1719, and died in Ipswich Sept. 13, 1720, aged 35.

Children:

1. *Ralph*, b. in 1706; m. in Newbury Oct. 31, 1728, Sarah Johnson. On Dec. 3, 1733, Ralph Cross of Newbury, shipwright, Stephen Cross, of Ipswich, clothier, and Robert Mitchell and wife Mary of Newbury, shipwright, all children of Mary, eldest daughter of Samuel Graves, feltmaker, late of Ipswich, and Elizabeth Cross, youngest daughter of Samuel Graves, and Robert Cross, her husband, conveyed to John Graves of Ipswich all their interest in the estate of Samuel Graves.‡ Ralph Cross was the head of the prominent and prosperous family of Newburyport ship-builders who did much to establish a U. S. navy during the Revolution.
2. *Stephen*; m. Oct. 25, 1732, Katherine Jewett. Administration on the estate of Stephen Cross, late of Ipswich, was granted to Katherine Cross, the widow, John White, jr., and James Foster, sureties, June 2, 1735. Widow Katherine Cross d. Aug. 3, 1736, and administration *de bonis non* was granted to John Wait and James Foster Sept. 1, 1736. Guardianship of Stephen Cross (bapt. July 6, 1735), aged 1 year, 2 months,

* Essex Deeds, 181: 66.

† Essex Probate, 310: 366, 370; 312: 28; 313: 216.

‡ Essex Deeds, 70: 138.

was given to Nehemiah Jewett Sept. 13, 1736. The two funerals cost £8: 5: 6 and £4: 5: 6. The estate was valued at £132: 1: 10. A New England shilling was worth 3s. 6d., and two silver buttons 3s. 2d.*

3. Mary; bapt. Sept. 23, 1711; m. in Newbury Dec. 2, 1731, Robert Mitchell.

vii. ANNA; m., int. March 15, 1706/7 James Foster.

viii. NATHANIEL; m. (1), int. Oct. 15, 1715, Mary Cues; m. (2), int. April 20, 1720, Elizabeth Lord who d. Jan. 3, 1730; m. (3), int. May 12, 1732, widow Phebe Adams. He was a shoreman. Five of his children died within a few weeks of each other, three on one day, in the winter of 1737-1738, of throat-distemper (diphtheria).

Nathaniel Cross died in Ipswich on Oct. 9, 1771. His will, made July 4, 1770, was proved Oct. 29, 1771. To his wife Phebe he left all his household goods, the westerly end of his dwelling, a garden and very ample annual provision for her comfort. To his son Benjamin, various lots of land, including one at Jeffrey's neck. To his daughters Martha, wife of Nathaniel Kimball, Anne Hodgkins, Mary, wife of Thomas Kimball, £12 apiece. Residue to his sons John and Nathaniel Cross in equal shares. Executors: sons John and Nathaniel. Witnesses: Daniel Giddinge, Mary Giddinge, Ruth Giddinge.† Phebe Cross was possibly that widow Cross who died Aug. 12, 1778.

The various maternal attributions in the baptismal records of his last three children can be laid at the door of a careless parson or clerk. There were such children and there were not such women as Abigail and Eunice.

Children, by first wife:

1. *Nathaniel*, bapt. June 30, 1717; d. young.

By second wife:

2. *Elizabeth*, bapt. March 12, 1720; d. Jan. 18, 1737/8.
3. *Martha*, bapt. Nov. 18, 1722; m., int. April 10, 1746, Nathaniel Kimball.
4. *Nathaniel*, bapt. Aug. 2, 1724; d. "suddenly without sickness" Oct. 6, 1745.
5. *Anna*, bapt. March 20, 1725; m., int. Aug. 1747, Thomas Hodgkins, 4th.
6. *Mary*, bapt. Nov. 12, 1727; m., int. Dec. 27, 1750, Thomas Kimball of Wenham.
7. *Francis*, bapt. April 6, 1729; d. Dec. 26, 1737.
8. *Benjamin*, bapt. Jan. 10, 1730; d. Jan. 7, 1737/8.

By third wife:

9. *John*, bapt. Nov. 11, 1733; d. Jan. 7, 1737/8.
10. *Sarah*, bapt. March, 1735/6; d. Jan. 7, 1737/8.
11. *Elizabeth*, bapt. Oct. 29, 1738; d. Sept. 18, 1754.
12. *John*, son of Nathaniel and *Abigail*, bapt. June 27, 1741.
13. *Benjamin*, son of Nathaniel and *Eunice*, bapt. June 22, 1744. *
14. *Nathaniel*, son of Nathaniel and *Eunice*, bapt. Nov. 20, 1748.

* Essex Probate, 320: 3.

† Essex Probate, 347: 240.

3. STEPHEN² CROSS (*Robert*¹) was born in Ipswich about 1647. He is first seen as a boy of thirteen riding home from evening service on a Sunday in May, 1660,* but this is far from indicative of his career. His second appearance is when he was seventeen, testifying for his father who was being sued by Gov. Bradstreet for the loss of some sheep which had been entrusted to him. Stephen and his elder brother Robert suggested that the sheep might have been killed by an enormous bear—"wee did Cill the bayer: wch for bignes was the biggest that ever was seen by aney of them."† The evening of "training day" was often a riotous one for young colonials, and in 1667, when he was twenty, Stephen Cross and his friends got themselves into serious trouble by wrecking the town's bridges near the wind-mill. They were jailed, sentenced to sit in the stocks, pay £3 each in fines and be bound to good behavior.‡ A year later Stephen was characterized as "a turbulent fellow but (one who) never spoke ill of authority," the former being obvious and the latter dubious as on this occasion he had been charged with "reproachful speeches against the worshipful magistrates," saying that they sat at dinner drinking burnt sack and when they came into court they looked red as though they were flustered and acted as though they were "fodeeled." Again he was bound to good behavior.§ In 1670 he and Thomas Deblanchet got into a fist fight in the meeting-house at sermon time, and, being summoned to court and not appearing, he was fined for contempt.||

In 1672 Robert Cross, sr., his son Stephen, widow Cheney of Newbury and her daughter Elizabeth met at the house of Quartermaster John Perkins in Ipswich. Robert Cross desired the widow to give her daughter Elizabeth to his son Stephen in marriage, but the widow would not consent unless Stephen was given some land to settle on by his father. Cross told the widow that he had an island in Chebacco river which he did intend for Stephen and that he valued it at about £200. This was satisfactory to goodwife Cheney and she consented to the match. Immediately thereupon Robert Cross drew a deed of gift to his son Stephen of the said island and subscribed to it, Perkins and John Kendrick acting as witnesses, and the young people "in some convenient time after were joined together in matrimony." John Kendrick swore to these facts on March 31, 1685.

* *Records and Files*, II: 201.

† *Records and Files*, III: 396.

‡ *Records and Files*, III: 399.

§ *Records and Files*, IV: 78-82.

|| *Records and Files*, IV: 235.

Possibly Cross's marriage to Elizabeth Cheney of Newbury at an unknown date was a restraining influence, for his court appearances for violent acts ceased for a time, at least. He bought half an acre of land on Water street in Ipswich from John Kendrick and built a house. Thomas Dennis, the talented Ipswich furniture maker, made him a table and chair in 1675. His business as the captain of a coasting vessel, the sloop *Adventure* of twenty tons, took him as far afield as Wethersfield in Connecticut and the towns on the Exeter and Piscataqua rivers, the voyages frequently resulting in lawsuits for payment of freight which Cross usually won. The *Adventure* was apparently bought by Cross in 1672, Samuel Cogswell of Ipswich owning a share, and was supposedly made fit to go to sea by Moses Chadwell of Lynn, who did a slow and poor job and lost in the resulting suit in 1676.* Later John Lee owned a share in the sloop. The business was apparently prosperous and Capt. Cross became a personage entitled to the title "Mr." in the records. In 1682 he had a negro slave in his crew who was "very well known a wicked person." The last heard of the *Adventure* is in the summer of 1689 when Capt. Cross's sloop, laden with a cargo of deal boards, was off Cape Cod and was captured by the pirate Thomas Pound, who kept the sloop and put her crew into the ketch from which he was operating at the moment and "sent them away"—mild treatment from a pirate.†

In 1684 Capt. Cross sold his Water street house to Job Bishop and bought the Richard Saltonstall place from Bishop, the property consisting of fourteen acres of land on both sides of Saltonstall brook, an orchard and the house.‡ Here he opened an inn and began again to be summoned to court, for illegal sales of spirits and for impairing the morals of Ipswich youth, including his future son-in-law, Benjamin Dutch, by providing a "shovel-board."

Capt. Stephen Cross was commander of the ketch *Lark* in the expedition against Canada in 1690. The *Lark* was a Salem vessel and Cross brought her back to her home port on March 18, 1690/91, and the arms on board were placed in Mr. Derby's warehouse.§

Cross was in financial difficulties in 1691. John Harris, the marshal, and his deputy, Thomas Low, came to serve an attachment on his property and later described his reception: "Capt.

* *Records and Files*, V: 197.

† *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 45: 216.

‡ Ipswich Deeds, 5: 200, 51.

§ Essex Quarterly Court Files, vol. 50, leaf 26.

Cross tooke his naked sword & he ran to ye said Low who was to assist me and told him he would run him through." Having ejected Low, the captain clapped the point of his rapier to the marshal's breast and bid him get out of the house. He saved his house and land by deeding them to his two minor sons, Stephen and John, who were to take possession when they reached their majorities and divide the property evenly, on May 9, 1691.*

In 1694 Cross began disposing of parts of the paternal farm at Chebacco, although his father was still living on it, selling one-half of "Daffeedowndille" marsh to Thomas Choate for £40 on July 24, and fourteen acres of marsh to John Appleton, jr., on August 10.† His brother-in-law, the steady Lieut. William Butler, bought for £100 all of Stephen's right, title and interest in the estate of Robert Cross, sr., as he disposed of it by deed or gift to his sons Robert Cross, jr., and Stephen Cross, on June 3, 1695. If the old man was still alive, he was safe in Butler's hands.‡

There are no probate records for Stephen Cross. His wife Elizabeth was living in 1694 as she released her dower in the Appleton deed. Cross was certainly dead in 1704/5 when his son John named Benjamin Dutch his guardian.§

Children (possibly others):

- i. SARAH; m. Jan. 7, 1702, Benjamin Dutch. (*See Dutch.*)
- ii. ROBERT; m., int. Sept. 26, 1719, Elizabeth Graves; d. June 6, 1738. He bought a house in Ipswich from Edward Webber in 1719.|| He was granted a lot in the town of Winchendon in 1735, because of his father's service in the Canada expedition. Robert Cross of Ipswich made his will May 23, 1738. He left all his estate, both real and personal, to his wife Elizabeth who was to dispose of it at her death to their two sons Robert and Moses, and named her executrix. Witnesses: John Appleton, jr., Benjamin Waite, Elizabeth Waite.¶ The widow Elizabeth Cross married Abraham Fitts, int. Nov. 18, 1739.

Children, baptized in Ipswich:

1. *Robert*, bapt. Oct. 29, 1721; possibly m. in Gloucester Oct. 23, 1744, Anstiss Ellery.
 2. *Samuel*, bapt. Nov. 8, 1724; d. April 6, 1728.
 3. *Moses*, bapt. April 30, 1727; d. June 5, 1729.
 4. *Moses*, bapt. Nov. 9, 1729; m. in Newbury July 17, 1753, Ann Goss.
- iii. STEPHEN. On Sept. 8, 1706, Stephen Cross of Ipswich, mariner, for £65 paid by Benjamin Dutch, sadler, released all claims to the house Dutch dwelt in, by virtue of a deed of gift from his

* Essex Deeds, 9: 15.

† Essex Deeds, 11: 184; 10: 19.

‡ Essex Deeds, 10: 163.

§ A Stephen Cross, unplaced, was married to Mary Lawrence in Boston January 3, 1692/3, by Rev. Cotton Mather.

|| Essex Deeds, 39: 123.

¶ Essex Probate, 322: 294-5.

father Stephen Cross, late of Ipswich, bearing date of May 13, 1691.* No other record of this Stephen Cross is found in Essex County. In Boston, however, on June 22, 1708, a Stephen Cross married Sarah Jackson, and on Feb. 12, 1713, Sarah Cross, widow, was appointed administratrix of the estate of her husband Stephen Cross, late of Boston, mariner, Joseph Jackson, cooper, and Elizabeth Jackson, spinster, being her sureties. This may well have been the Ipswich man.†

- iv. NATHANIEL, b. April 2, d. April 25, 1686.
- v. JOHN, b. in 1687. On Jan. 22, 1704/5, John, son of Capt. Stephen Cross, late of Ipswich, appointed his beloved brother Benjamin Dutch, sadler, his guardian.‡ There is no further record of him.
- vi. ANNA (probably); m. July 23, 1714, Joseph Hart. She had a son Stephen.

* Essex Deeds, 21 : 62.

† Suffolk Probate, No. 3548.

‡ Essex Probate, 308 : 326.

XI
JORDAN, OF IPSWICH

JORDAN

STEPHEN JORDAN came to New England in the *Mary and John* which sailed from Southampton in March, 1633/4, with many passengers who settled in Newbury, Ipswich and Salisbury. The list includes only adult males who took the required oaths before sailing, but presumably Jordan was accompanied by his wife and daughters. He went to Ipswich where his name is first on the records in 1636. The town granted him a house-lot—three rods of ground lying in Stony Street leading to the river, first granted to Humphrey Bradstreet, and a planting-lot next to that of Robert Cross who became his son-in-law. Later he came into possession of Thomas West's house-lot "near the foot bridge" and sold it with the house thereon to Samuel Younglove, jr., in 1659.*

Jordan subscribed to Major Denison's salary as military commander in 1648. In 1650 he was excused from ordinary training because of his age, which indicates that he was born about 1590. Gov. Bradstreet entrusted Jordan, Robert Cross and William White with thirty ewes about 1653, and they were turned over to the care of Cross's two boys, Robert and Stephen. The boys were possibly careless—they said that many of the sheep had been killed by a great bear—and Bradstreet sued their father and grandfather in 1657.†

The name of Jordan's first wife is not known. Some time after 1655, when Nathaniel Merrill of Newbury died, Stephen Jordan married the widow, Susanna Merrill, and went to live in Newbury. Before his death on February 8, 1669, he was "in a very weak condition a long time and not able to support himself nor wife with things necessary for his so low condition and being in debt & could not pay it." It is recorded that "the old man did not care to go into the wet to mow his meadow" but let John Fuller mow it.‡ The selectmen went to Ipswich to inform his sons-in-law, and Cross and Andrews came to Newbury and said that they had property belonging to Jordan which he was to have if need be. On their return they sent Jordan Indian corn, wheat, sugar, currants, veal, cloth, "a Lardg Red Wastcoat," all valued at £2: 18: 0, and cattle worth £20. These last Susanna Jordan sold without making an accounting.§

Stephen Jordan made his will April 5, 1667. To his daughters Cross and Andrews, both of Ipswich, he left £15 apiece. To his

* Ipswich Deeds, 3: 75.

† *Records and Files*, III: 396.

‡ *Records and Files*, IV: 4.

§ *Records and Files*, IV: 334.

wife, his house and land at Newbury for life, and at her death to Steven, son of Robert Crose of Ipswich, his son-in-law. Half of his household goods to his wife, and the other half to his two sons Robert Crose and John Andrews. Steven Crose was to give "his kinswoman and my grandchild Elizabeth Andrews" £5. Witnesses: Susanna Wheeler, Mary Poore. The inventory listed a very small estate of £39. He owed his wife's son Abel Merrill for "attendance on him both night and day for three years." The will was allowed by the court, but with the contradictory order that the entire estate be left in the hands of the widow for her subsistence for life. This was pointed out by Cross and Andrews when they brought suit against her Nov. 29, 1670, for withholding the legacies. They obtained a verdict.*

Widow Susanna Jordan died in Newbury January 25, 1673. Administration on her estate was granted to Abel Merrill, her youngest son, March 25, 1673.†

Children:

- i. ANN (OR ANNA); m. Robert Cross. (*See Cross.*)
- ii. JANE; m. John Andrews.

* *Records and Files*, IV: 247, 334.

† *Pobate Records of Essex County*, II: 322.

XII
CHENEY, OF NEWBURY

CHENEY

1. JOHN CHENEY of Roxbury and Newbury was, in all probability, that John Cheney who married Martha Smithe in Lawford, co. Essex, England, on March 3, 1631. In the same parish John and Martha Cheney had a son Peter baptized on February 17, 1631 (2), and a daughter, the space for her name left blank in the parish register, baptized on April 28, 1634. As will be seen, the emigrant couple, John and Martha Cheney, brought four children with them when they came to America in 1635, so, if they were in fact the Lawford Cheney's, John must have had an earlier wife. Likewise Peter, the baby of 1631/2, must have died in infancy as he was not listed as one of the four children in 1635. Another son Peter was born in New England.*

Rev. John Eliot, "the Apostle to the Indians" and parson at Roxbury, in the list of his parishioners described the Cheney's as follows:

"John Cheny he came into the Land in the year 1635, he brought 4 children, Mary, Martha, John, Daniel. Sarah his 5^t child was borne in the last month of the same year 1635, cald February. he removed from or church to Newbery the end of the next summer 1636. Martha Cheny the wife of John Cheny."

In Newbury he seems to have lived in the old town but to have had interests in the "new town" where he was granted Lot 50 on the "field street" in 1643. He had other small grants of marsh and pasture. He was a selectman in 1652, 1655, 1661, 1664 and possibly other years. He was a trial juryman in 1646 (fined 2s. 6d. for not appearing) and 1652, and served on the grand jury in 1648, 1656, 1660 and 1663.

Cheney's name seldom appears in the court records. He was surety for his widowed daughter, Martha Sadler, in 1650 and guardian of her posthumous child, Abiel Sadler, in 1652. In 1654 he and his sons John and Daniel signed the Lieut. Robert Pike petition and took a courageous stand under governmental pressure to recant. Cheney said that Pike was his friend and out of love to him he signed the petition voluntarily, while the boys said that the reasons why they signed were stated in the petition.† In 1656 and 1657 Richard Kent sued Cheney twice for fencing and denying a right of way when it had been laid out. He testified to the integrity of his neighbor William Titcomb in 1657.

John Cheney, senior, of Newbury, made his will June 5, 1666,

* This probable identification is being investigated further by Mr. F. W. C. Hersey.
† *Records and Files*, I: 366-8.

and it was proved on the following September 25. To his son Daniel Cheney he gave his dwelling house, barn, cornland, pasture and meadows in Old Newbury, also his tools of husbandry. His wife Martha was to dwell with Daniel and be supplied with all necessities, but if she chose to go elsewhere she was to have £10 yearly or the dower rights in his lands, whichever she might choose. She was to have all her wearing apparell and the disposal of all household goods not otherwise disposed of by his will. To his son John, a two acre lot once Anthony Short's in the south field of Newbury old town, three acres of salt marsh, twenty-four acres in Salisbury new town at the plain called Cimbrow, all his clothing—he had a coat, a cloak, a cloth suit, a serge suit, a leather suit, two shirts, two pairs of stockings, hose and a best hat—a musket, a saw, a heifer called “Brindle,” and, after John's mother's death, £30, a great brass kettle, a new pewter dish marked IC and a white bed rug. To his son Nathaniel, four oxen with their yokes and chain, two cows called “Line” and “Pie” with their calves, a three year old heifer, a yearling colt, a yearling heifer called “Curly,” his arms complete, a broad hoe, an ax and his scythe and sickle, also a bedspread, bed, bolster and pillow, a pair of sheets and a yellow cotton rug, the great yarn pot and a posnet. After his mother's death Nathaniel was to have £20, the best chest, the Bible, one pewter platter. Each son was to have six bushels of apples a year for seven years from his orchard. To his daughter Elizabeth, three cows, one called “Spark” with her calf, one whitefaced and a third called “Col,” two yearling heifers and £15. To his son Peter, in addition to what he had already had, £10 and £5 within three years of his mother's death. To Joseph Plumer, £5. To John Kenrick, £4 “which he oweth me” and a cow. To Richard Smith, £5. To William Lawes' three daughters Rebecca, Mary and Priscilla, 40s. apiece. To his grandchild Abiel Sadler “his father deceasing before he was born,” £10 of his father's estate “whearof I stand engaged” and £5 more, to be paid at the age of one and twenty, also “my lastes and Toles belonging to my Trade” and a great bossed Bible and a pewter basin of his father's. To his grandchild Hannah Burkebe, £3. Executor: son Daniel Cheney. Witnesses: Richard Dole, William Ilsie. The inventory totalled £553: 5: 0.

Children:

- i. MARY, b. in England; m. Sept. 3, 1645, William Lawes of Rowley.
- ii. MARTHA, b. in England; m. (1) Anthony Sadler; m. (2) Thomas Burkby of Ipswich.

- iii. JOHN, b. in England; m. April 20, 1660, Mary Plumer.
- 2. iv. DANIEL, b. in England.
- v. SARAH, b. in Roxbury Feb., 1635/6; m. Dec. 23, 1652, Joseph Plumer.
- vi. PETER; m. May 14, 1663, Hannah Noyes.
- vii. LYDIA; m. Nov. 12, 1657, John Kendrick of Ipswich.
- viii. HANNAH, b. in Newbury Nov. 16, 1642; m. Nov. 16, 1659, Richard Smith, jr., of Ipswich.
- ix. NATHANIEL, b. Jan. 12, 1644; d. April 24, 1684, *s.p.* He had apparently contemplated moving to western Massachusetts for he owned lands in Suffield in the Connecticut valley which he deeded to John Cheney, son of his brother Peter, on April 1, 1684, just before his death.
The will of Nathaniel Cheney of Newbury, aged thirty-eight, "finding my malady to increase," made Apr. 9, 1684, was proved June 24, 1684. He left the bulk of his property, one-third each to his brother Peter Cheney and his sisters Lydia Kendrick and Elizabeth Cross. His great Bible, after the death of his mother, was to go to his sister Smith, or in the event of her death to his cousin Nathaniel Smith. To his eldest brother's daughter Sarah Cheney, a skillet. To her sister Hannah Cheney, a dozen trenchers. Executors: friends and brothers in the Lord George Little and Cutting Noyes. Witnesses: Thomas Lovall, jr., Sarah Kinrick.
- x. ELIZABETH, b. Jan. 12, 1647; m. Stephen Cross of Ipswich. (*See Cross.*)

2. DANIEL² CHENEY (*John*¹) was born in England about 1633, and was a child of two when he came to New England with his parents. He married in Newbury October 8, 1665, Sarah Bayley. He died in Newbury September 10, 1694, and she survived until October 26, 1714.

Daniel Cheney signed the Pike petition in 1654, and told the intimidating agents of the General Court that he and his father and brother were not bound to tell who brought the petition to them, which required character and courage which many older and more prominent Newbury men lacked. He took the Freeman's Oath in September, 1672, and the Oath of Allegiance in 1678, aged 43. In King Philip's war he supplied a horse for a journey to Dedham. He was a member of the grand jury in 1680.

Sarah Cheney, widow of Daniel Cheney, late of Newbury, renounced administration on his estate on December 3, 1694, and requested that Daniel Cheney, the eldest son, be appointed, which was done. The estate, which was valued at £571, was divided in June, 1696, the widow receiving £34: 5: 8 in real estate and £42: 4: 8 in personal property, Daniel as eldest son £59: 14: 0 in real estate and £18: 15: 0 in personal property, and the other children, John, Joseph, James, Sarah, Judith, Hannah and Eleanor, £29: 17: 0 in land and £9: 7: 0 in personalty apiece.* Joshua

* Essex Probate, 303: 76.

Bailey was appointed guardian of John and Eleanor Cheney and Joseph Bailey of Joseph and James Cheney on September 26, 1695.*

Children, born in Newbury:

- i. SARAH, b. Sept. 11, 1666; m. June 16, 1696, John Richards, jr.
- ii. JUDITH, b. Sept. 6, 1668; m. John Emerson.
- iii. DANIEL, b. Dec. 31, 1670; m. Hannah Dustin of Haverhill, namesake of her heroic mother.
- iv. HANNAH, b. Sept. 3, 1673; m. (1) in Newbury Dec. 17, 1696, Lieut. Thomas Wiswall of Cambridge Village (Newton); m. (2) June, 1719, Deacon David Newman of Rehoboth.
- v. JOHN, b. July 10, 1676; m. (1) Elizabeth ——— who d. Jan. 10, 1715; m. (2) Oct. 22, 1717, Elizabeth Burrage, who m. secondly Oct. 23, 1729, Benjamin Whitmore of Newton.
- vi. ELEANOR, b. March 29, 1679; m. (1) Dec. 17, 1696, Richard Shatswell, a double wedding with her sister Hannah; m. (2) Oct. 7, 1698, Thomas Safford. (*See Safford.*)
- vii. JOSEPH, bapt. April 9, 1682; m. (1) int. Nov. 14, 1702, Sarah Wiswall; m. (2) Oct. 12, 1721, Abigail (Trowbridge) Greenwood.
- viii. JAMES, b. April 16, 1685.

* Essex Probate, 305: 81-2.

XIII

SAFFORD, OF IPSWICH AND NEWBURY

SAFFORD

SAFFORD is a very rare surname of which traces have thusfar been found in the Isle of Wight in Hampshire, in co. Cambridge and co. Essex. It is from this last county that it is most probable that the emigrant to New England, Thomas Safford, came.

In the period just before the emigration eight Thomas Saffords (or Saffolds, a variant) were married in Essex, as set down in Mr. Percival Boyd's Index of Essex Marriages:

- 1601 Thomas Safford and Elizabeth Lion at Ardleigh.
- 1604 Thomas Saffold and Joan Brown at Woodham Ferrers.
- 1607 Thomas Saffold and Ann Brouch at Woodham Ferrers.
- 1608 Thomas Safford and Elizabeth Tailor at Ardleigh.
- 1619 Thomas Saffold and Jane Haines at Faulkborn.
- 1623 Thomas Saffold and Elizabeth Johns at Maldon.
- 1623 Thomas Saffold and Rachel Clark at South Weald.
- 1633 Thomas Saffold and Joan Sparrow at Bocking St. Mary.

In the Essex Ship Money Returns of 1636, there are a Thomas Safford at Grays Thurrock, on the Thames near Tilbury, and a Thomas Saffold at Purleigh, near Maldon. In 1606 and 1607 a Thomas Saffold of Wakering and his wife were in trouble with the ecclesiastical authorities for "not coming to the church & for not receiving the communion," usually an indication of Puritanism.

I. THOMAS SAFFORD was admitted a commoner in the town of Ipswich in 1641, which is the first recording of his name thus far found in New England.* Presumably he came to America at about that time, bringing with him his wife Elizabeth and their five children. He is seldom mentioned in the records and apparently led a peaceful life on his farm. He gave a day's work to the building of the East bridge in 1646, subscribed to Major Denison's salary in 1648 and was a member of the county trial jury March 31, 1657. He bought a farm of thirty-two acres from Henry Kingsbury in 1648 and doubtless had grants of other lands as his final holding was sixty acres. He received one and a half shares of Plum Island in 1664.

On February 20, 1666, Thomas Safford, husbandman, deeded to his son Joseph, for love and affection, his farm in Ipswich, containing about sixty acres of upland and fresh meadow, bounded on the northeast by Robert Wallis, southeast by the highway to Mr. Saltonstall's farm, southwest by thick woods, and northwest by the river, also the house, barn and outhousing. Joseph was to pay half of the benefit of the farm to his father annually

* The man made freeman in Boston in 1630 was Thomas *Sanford*.

during his life and after his death to pay his mother £6 a year for her natural life. He was also to maintain his sister Elizabeth for life "unless she thinks good otherwise to dispose of herself," whereupon he was to give her £20. He was to pay his sister Mary £5 and his sister Abigail £15 three years after his father's decease. This document was neither signed nor witnessed, but nevertheless it was presented as a will on March 26, 1667, by Joseph Safford. John Adams and Nicholas Wallis deposed on that day that they were present when Thomas Safford was on his death bed, and that he said he would have the writing stand, that he had given his daughter Killeme £5 and would also give her one of his heifers, and would give his daughter Abie (Abigail) a heifer and a calf. The inventory totalled £244.* Widow Elizabeth Safford died at Ipswich March 4, 1670.

Children :

1. i. MARY; m. Oct. 1648, Daniel Kilham of Wenham.
2. ii. JOHN.
3. iii. JOSEPH.
- iv. ABIGAIL, living and probably married in 1666.
- v. ELIZABETH, d. unmarried Oct. 7, 1672, in Wenham, where she lived with her sister Mary after her mother's death.

2. JOHN² SAFFORD (*Thomas*¹) was born in England about the year 1631 (his age was given in 1661 as about thirty), and was brought as a boy to Ipswich by his parents. He married Sarah Low, daughter of Thomas Low of Ipswich, who named her and her daughter, Sarah Safford, in his will in 1677, presumably in 1661, when on January 19 he bought from Anthony Potter a house and three acres in Ipswich on the north side of the river near the mill and bounded all about by highways. He was a blacksmith by trade and was interested in the small iron-works in Topsfield and Rowley village, being one of the owners of the latter in 1675.

In the September term of court, 1672, he sued Ensign John Gould for debt and lost the case, but in the November term his suit against Henry Leonard of the Topsfield iron-works for ten hundred-weight of bar iron was successful.

He saw service against the Indians in the Narragansett expedition during King Philip's War. He served on a jury of inquest in 1676, had common rights in Ipswich in 1678, and was a grand juror in the March term of the Essex County Court in 1680.†

* *Probate Records of Essex County*, II: 79-81.

† In *Records and Files*, V: 318, the name of John Safford's wife is given as *Ann*. This was undoubtedly an error of the clerk as his only wife was Sarah. *Records and Files*, I: 368; V: 84; VI: 3, 234.

On September 5, 1698, John and Sarah Safford deeded to their son Thomas their dwelling-house, barn, shop, orchard and garden, standing on four acres of land in return for his care for the remainder of their lives. Thomas was to allow his sister Sarah a room in the house so long as she remained unmarried.* John Safford died before June 16, 1708, when the widow Sarah, her son Thomas and Eleanor, his wife, conveyed part of the homestead to Michael Farley, jr.†

Children, born in Ipswich:

4. i. JOHN.
- ii. SARAH, b. July 14, 1664; d. July 21, 1712, aged 47.
- iii. MARGARET, b. Feb. 28, 1665; no further record.
- iv. REBECCA, b. about Aug. 30, 1667; m. Jan. 13, 1689/90, Nathan Wheeler of Rowley.‡
- v. MERCY, b. Feb. 26, 1668/9; no further record.
- vi. ELIZABETH, b. Feb. 27, 1670; m. July 20, 1697, Alexander Lovell.
5. vii. THOMAS, b. Oct. 16, 1672.
- viii. JOSEPH, b. Mar. 12, 1674; no further record.
- ix. MEHITABLE; m. (1) May 25, 1702, John Hovey; m. (2) int. Apr. 7, 1722, Ebenezer Browne of Rowley; m. (3) int. July 24, 1733, Lieut. Jacob Perley of Boxford. Thomas Safford (vii above) deeded Hovey one-quarter of an acre out of his Ipswich house-lot in 1708.§

3. JOSEPH² SAFFORD (*Thomas*¹) was born in England about the year 1633, as his age in 1692 was stated to be fifty-nine and in 1701 sixty-nine. He was therefore about eight years old when he crossed the Atlantic. He married in Ipswich March 6, 1660, Mary Baker.

On May 13, 1667, he was in court for striking John Lighton and was bound to good behavior, his brother John being the surety on his bond.|| He served in King Philip's War under Capt. Nicholas Paige and on September 3, 1675, he was credited with £2 for his part in the expedition to Mt. Hope. He was a member of a jury of inquest in 1676, a trial juror in the September term of the Essex County Court in 1678, a commoner of Ipswich in 1678, a freeman October 11, 1682, and a selectman in 1697. In 1699 he and eight other members of the church objected to the sale of the old meeting-house because it involved the loss of their pews, but to no avail, and in the new meeting-house he, with the comforting title of "Mr.," was given a seat.

In 1694 and 1695 a group of Ipswich men, Joseph Safford,

* Essex Deeds, 32: 161.

† Essex Deeds, 25: 142.

‡ See *Early Settlers of Rowley*, 1933 edition, p. 404.

§ Essex Deeds, 27: 39.

|| *Records and Files*, III: 448.

Richard Smith, Meshach Farley, Matthew Perkins and Samuel Bishop, bought from Capt. James Fitch of Norwich in the Connecticut colony a tract of eighteen hundred acres which was later called Preston and on which three of Safford's children settled. Captain Fitch's title to this land was extremely dubious. After King Philip's War he held it as a sort of trust for a small local tribe of Indians known as the Showtuckets to whom it had been guaranteed. When Fitch transferred the title to himself there were murmurs of disapproval among the more sensitive of the Norwich settlers, but nothing was actually done to restore what seems to have been, in bald terms, stolen property and by 1694 the title was regarded as good.*

On May 1, 1701, Safford made a settlement of his estate with his two sons John and Samuel by deed, the sons to support their father and mother for the remainder of their lives. John received the dwelling-house, barns, yards, gardens, pasture and meadow in Ipswich, and one-half of the household furniture and movables. He also was to have one-half plus one-seventh of the dwelling, buildings and lands in the town of "Norwitch in ye Comenticut Colony." To Samuel went the lower side of the tillage land in Ipswich, the other half of the furniture and movables, and one-half minus one-seventh of the Norwich property. Houses were to be built for both sons. They were to keep their sister Mary for life if she remained unmarried, and to pay their sisters Sarah Kimball (£9: 13: 0), Elizabeth Brown (£8: 5: 0) and Hannah Safford (£20).†

Joseph Safford died August 29, 1701, in his seventieth year. His wife's death is not recorded.

Children, born in Ipswich:

- i. MARY, b. Feb. 20, 1661; unmarried in 1701.
- ii. JOSEPH, b. Aug. 11, 1664; d. before 1701.
- iii. SARAH, b. Mar. 20, 1666; in 1701 she was Sarah Kimball, probably wife of Caleb Kimball, who was born in Wenham in 1665 and had a wife Sarah, who died Feb. 20, 1731/2.
- iv. ELIZABETH, b. Aug. 3, 1670; in 1701 she was Elizabeth Brown, probably wife of John Brown, who had a wife Elizabeth by 1696 and moved to Preston.
- v. JOHN; m. July 11, 1702, Abigail Martin.
- vi. THOMAS, d. June 1676.
- vii. SAMUEL, b. July 1678; m. (1) Elizabeth —; m. (2) Hannah —.
- viii. HANNAH, b. Jan. 11, 1681; unmarried in 1701; m. in Ipswich Oct. 8, 1705, James Tyler of Preston (by Ipswich record), of Boston (by Boston record).

* *History of Norwich*, by Frances Caulkins, edition of 1866.

† Essex Deeds, 15: 80.

4. JOHN³ SAFFORD (*John*,² *Thomas*¹) married Hannah Newman September 15, 1685, in Ipswich. They settled in Preston, Connecticut, with other Essex County families. His second wife, Deborah —, became his widow upon his death on March 29, 1736.

His will, dated February 5, 1735/6, proved April 2, 1736, naming his sons Joseph and Gideon executors, is unusual in its frank expression of his sense of being the founder of a landed family in the English tradition. He orders a "moniment upon my graufe . . . built with ston or brick and a tombston ouer it Ingrafein on it my death and age that my Children mit know how they cum by their land that they had a granfather that left it for them and left his boons In possession for them for ever bein the first that ever did anything upon it and setled it." To wife Deborah, £10 etc. expressed in two bonds under the hands and seals of sons Joseph and Gideon, the goods she brought with her, her choice of two good cows, a good horse to ride on, etc. All movable estate to three living daughters, Marcy Tracy, Elizabeth Whipyrill and Margaret Bingham, Charity Raseboone (Rathbone), eldest daughter of daughter Hannah, and Zipporah Haskell, eldest daughter of daughter Sarah, the granddaughters to share equally with their aunts. £100 in money, bills and bonds to the children of the five daughters. To grandsons, Zebulon Parks, John Bingham (his father, Nathaniel Bingham, mentioned), Ezekiel Parks, Daniel Tracy, Gideon Haskell, Oliver Perkins. Overseers: my two cousins Thomas Tracy and Samuel Morgan. Witnesses: John Ames, John Ames, jr., John Ames the third.*

"The age of John Safford's children" is recorded in the town books of Preston.

Children:

- i. JOHN, b. Feb. 28, 1687/8; m. in Preston Aug. 18, 1710, Dorothy Larrabee; d. Sept. 12, 1724. Administration on his estate was granted to his father and his widow Feb. 16, 1724/5, John Ames surety. The inventory listed property valued at £316, and Dorothy Safford presented her account Feb. 9, 1725/6.†

Children:

1. *Dorothy*, b. Aug. 18, 1712, at Voluntown; m. in Norwich Nov. 22, 1733, Capt. Daniel Tracy.
2. *Hannah*, b. Nov. 24, 1714; m. Dec. 25, 1735, Benjamin Tracy.
3. *Desire*, b. Oct. 18, 1717; m. in Norwich Feb. 25, 1735/6, Samuel Gore.

* New London Probate Files, No. 4666.

† New London Probate Files, No. 4665.

4. *Esther*, b. Apr. 15, 1720; m. Andrew Stevens.
5. *Sarah*, b. Sept. 4, 1721.
6. *Elizabeth*, b. Sept. 4 (*sic*), 1724; m. in Norwich July 4, 1744, Timothy Whipple of Groton.
- ii. HANNAH, b. Sept. 24, 1691; m. in Preston Aug. 14, 1710, Ebenezer Perkins.
- iii. SARAH, b. Dec. 25, 1694; m. in Norwich Dec. 1, 1720, Roger Haskell.
- iv. MARCY, b. Mar. 3, 1697; m. in Preston (1) Sept. 20, 1716, Ezekiel Parke, and (2) Apr. 15, 1728, Jedediah Tracy.
- v. ELIZABETH, b. Jan. 24, 1700; m. — Whippyrill (Whipple) before 1735/6.
- vi. MARGARET, b. Apr. 24, 1703; m. Nathaniel Bingham by 1725.
- vii. JOSEPH, b. Jan. 18, 1705; m. (1) in Preston Dec. 20, 1727, Patience Yeomans, who d. Mar. 3, 1748, aged 45; m. (2) Jan. 11, 1749, Martha Cotes at North Stonington.

Children, born in Preston :

1. *John*, b. Mar. 31, 1729; m. Mar. 15, 1759, Mary Johnson.
2. *Joseph*, b. Feb. 8, 1730/1; m. Apr. 25, 1753, Lydia Ensworth of Canterbury.
3. *Hannah*, b. Nov. 26, 1732; m. May 23, 1754, James Rix.
4. *Sarah*, b. Mar. 3, 1734.
5. *Lucretia*, b. May 1, 1737; m. Oct. 10, 1771, Dea. Thomas Miner.
6. *Jonathan*, b. Sept. 21, 1738; m. Nov. 21, 1759, Susanna Brooks at Windsor.
7. *David*, b. Sept. 21 (*sic*), 1740; m. Nov. 17, 1762, Mary Choate.
- viii. GIDEON, b. Mar. 24, 1709; m. Jan. 13, 1731/2, Elizabeth Hill, who d. June 6, 1805, aged 94; he d. at Preston Mar. 20, 1780, aged 73.

Children, born in Preston :

1. *Mary*, b. Sept. 1, 1732; m. Mar. 5, 1752, Matthias Button.
2. *Thomas*, b. Oct. 15, 1735; m. Oct. 25, 1764, Phebe Kimball of Stonington.
3. *Elizabeth*, b. Sept. 17, 1737.
4. *Thankful*, b. Oct. 15, 1739.
5. *Amy*, b. Jan. 25, 1742.
6. *Lucy*, b. Apr. 3, 1744; m. June 19, 1765, Preserved Brumley.
7. *Priscilla* (possibly); m. Apr. 10, 1769, Jonathan Boardman.
8. *Samuel*, b. Jan. 2, 1748; m. Anna —; d. in 1824 at Salem, N. Y.
9. *Peggy*, b. May 10, 1750.
10. *Anne*, b. July 12, 1752; m. Uriah Beeman Nov. 12, 1771.
11. *Gideon*, b. Nov. 4, 1754; m. Nov. 10, 1774, Lucy Freeman.

5. THOMAS³ SAFFORD (*John*,² *Thomas*¹) was born in Ipswich October 16, 1672. He married, first, Eleanor (Cheney) Shatswell, a young widow, October 7, 1698. She died December 22, 1724. He married, second, June 29, 1725, Sarah Scott of Rowley. He died April 30, 1754.

Sometime before his death he had turned over the management

of his farm and estate to his son Daniel. His will, of Ipswich, yeoman, left to his wife Sarah the income of the estate as then paid over to him by Daniel, the household goods and what property she brought with her. To son Thomas, he to pay his brother James £3, three acres of salt marsh, which is his double share in full. To son James, the above £3. To sons Joseph and John, a milled dollar apiece. To son Stephen, two lots of land on the northwesterly side of my father's homestead between his brother John's and George Newman's lands. To grandchildren Mary and Thomas, children of deceased son Nathan, six sheep and all household goods. To grandson Daniel Safford, military armor, sword and girdle, du-roy coat, camblet jacket, best hat, blue cloth breeches, iron-bound chest, etc. Executor: son Daniel. Witnesses: John Kimball, Aaron Lord, Nathan Foster. The document was dated August 11, 1753, and was proved May 27, 1754.*

The will of Sarah Safford of Ipswich, widow, was signed February 26, 1761, and probated May 31, 1762. Beside remembering many of her Scott relations, she left land to her step-son Daniel Safford, a feather-bed to her grandson Daniel Safford, to granddaughter Mary Safford a crepe gown and two plain boxes, to granddaughter Hannah Safford a table. To granddaughter Mary Caldwell, wife of Benjamin Caldwell, bedding, wearing apparel, linen, a pewter dish, a sugar box, etc. To Martha Safford, wife of grandson Abraham, a pewter dish. Residue to daughter-in-law Elizabeth Safford, wife of Daniel Safford. Witnesses: John Hodgkins, Joseph Hodgkins, Nathan Foster.†

Children, born in Ipswich:

- i. SARAH, b. Mar. 29, 1701; d. July 10, 1702.
6. ii. THOMAS, b. Apr. 28, 1703.
7. iii. JOSEPH, b. Mar., 1704/5.
8. iv. DANIEL, b. 1706.
9. v. JOHN.
- vi. MERCY (possibly); m. Nathaniel Howard of Newbury Jan. 15, 1736; he m., secondly, Martha Safford Jan. 8. 1757.
10. vii. NATHAN, bapt. Mar. 16, 1712.
11. viii. JAMES, bapt. June 27, 1714.
12. ix. STEPHEN, bapt. Feb. 10, 1716.
- x. TITUS, bapt. Feb. 24, 1722/3; d. Apr. 11, 1729.

6. THOMAS⁴ SAFFORD (*Thomas*,³ *John*,² *Thomas*¹) was married four times. He married, first, int. April 1, 1727, Sarah Dresser, who died June 29, 1736. He took as his second wife, July 7, 1737, Elizabeth Ayers of Newbury, who died August 28,

* Essex Probate, 332: 241.

† Essex Probate, No. 24508.

1747. She was followed, int. December 3, 1747, by widow Margaret Stacy, who died January 1, 1764. Finally he married at Gloucester June 5, 1764, widow Eunice Whorf.

The will of Thomas Safford, yeoman, of Ipswich, was made September 23, 1775, and proved May 6, 1776. To his wife Eunice, during her widowhood, he left his house, one-half of his land, all his household goods and his negro man Prince. His wearing apparel was to be divided between his sons Benjamin, Joshua, Thomas, Moses and Simeon. Benjamin and Joshua (if living) got small sums of money, and Thomas and Moses marsh lands. His daughter Sarah Howlett was left six shillings.*

Children by first wife, recorded in Ipswich :

- i. SARAH, bapt. July 26, 1728; d. July 31, 1736.
- ii. THOMAS, bapt. Aug. 1, 1731; d. July 15, 1736.
- iii. BENJAMIN, bapt. Dec. 1, 1734. His father was appointed his guardian Nov. 21, 1752. After serving in the French and Indian War, he settled in Exeter. He m. (1) Shuah Lougee, and (2) Susanna Meloon who d. Jan. 28, 1798, aged 59. He d. Nov. 29, 1827, aged 93.

Children, born in Exeter :

1. *Benjamin*, b. Mar. 26, 1758; m. at Hampton Falls Apr. 22, 1786, Judith Vicary.
2. *Joseph*, bapt. July 10, 1763; m. Elizabeth Towle at Hampton, int. Oct. 29, 1791; d. Dec. 28, 1832; she d. Jan. 22, 1849, aged 76.
3. *Susan*, bapt. Feb. 20, 1765; d. Dec. 6, 1843, unmarried.
4. *Nathaniel*, b. Aug. 4, 1767; d. Oct. 29, 1770.
5. *John*, b. Mar. 24, 1769; d. unmarried in 1850 at Monmouth, Me.
6. *Anna*, b. Mar. 7, 1772; d. Dec. 15, 1848, unmarried.
7. *Nathaniel*, b. Oct. 29, 1773; m. Elizabeth Evans; lived in Boston.
8. *Dudley*, b. Nov. 15, 1776; m. Elizabeth Gilman; d. July 18, 1822.
9. *William*, b. Apr. 17, 1778; m. at Newmarket Oct. 25, 1803, Sarah Brazier Colcord, who d. Dec. 19, 1867, aged 85; he d. Sept. 8, 1839.
10. *Samuel*, b. Aug. 16, 1782; m. Mar. 26, 1807, Mary Hobbs of Topsfield, who d. Apr. 24, 1874, aged 88; he d. July 29, 1857, at Newburyport.

By second wife :

- iv. THOMAS, bapt. June 4, 1738; m. (1) in Salem Apr. 27, 1764, Elizabeth Phelps; m. (2) in Salem Nov. 22, 1785, widow Sarah Lasser. He died in Salem in 1788, aged 50.† His will, of Salem, cordwainer, left one-half of his real estate and all of his personal property to his wife Sarah, and divided the residue equally between his children Emma, Thomas, Jude, Hannah, Sarah, Rachel and Joshua. It was dated Feb. 1 and proved Apr. 9, 1788.‡ The widow m. Ephraim Abbott of Andover, int. Aug. 20, 1789.

* Essex Probate, 351 : 562.

† Newspaper of March. 4, 1788.

‡ Essex Probate, 359 : 371.

Children, born in Salem :

1. *Elizabeth*, b. Feb. 18, 1765; not in her father's will.
 2. *Emma*, b. Dec. 15, 1766; m. Ebed Lewis Sept. 30, 1784.
 3. *Judith*, b. Mar. 9, 1770; unmarried in 1798.
 4. *Hannah*, b. Feb. 4, 1774; m. Josiah Dodge, int. Nov. 1, 1794.
 5. *Sarah*, b. Mar. 20, 1775; m., int. May 7, 1803, William Randall.
 6. *Thomas*, b. Sept. 26, 1776; he bought out the interest of three of his sisters in their father's homestead in 1798.*
 7. *Rachel*, b. Oct. 10, 1777; m. Andrew Morgan Dec. 22, 1796.
 8. *Joshua*, b. Sept. 7, 1779; m. Dorothy Foy Oct. 15, 1801.
 9. *John*, b. Nov. 1, 1781; not in his father's will.
 10. *Mary*, b. Aug. 11, 1783; not in her father's will.
- v. JOSHUA, bapt. Aug. 26, 1739; his whereabouts, if living, unknown in 1775.
- vi. SARAH, bapt. May 3, 1741; m. Samuel Howlett of Topsfield, int. Nov. 17, 1759.
- vii. SIMEON, bapt. July 1, 1744; m. Deborah Harris, int. Oct. 1, 1768; d. Oct. 15, 1828, aged 84; she d. July 28, 1830, aged 83. A blacksmith in his native town.

Children, born in Ipswich :

1. *Deborah*, bapt. June 17, 1770; m. Nov. 7, 1793, Moses Graves.
 2. *Hannah*, b. Sept. 7, 1772.
 3. *Mary*, bapt. Feb. 28, 1774; m. Apr. 25, 1799, John Jeffs.
 4. *John*, b. Aug. 10, 1775.
 5. *Elizabeth*, bapt. June 7, 1778; m. Sept. 21, 1798, William Seward.
 6. *Sarah*, b. Dec. 12, 1781; d. unmarried Oct. 21, 1873, at Malden.
 7. *Susanna*, bapt. Nov. 21, 1784; possibly the child who d. Sept. 18, 1785.
 8. *Joseph*, b. July 10, 1787.
 9. *Ephraim*, bapt. Apr. 18, 1790; d. Sept. 13, 1861, at Malden.
- viii. MOSES, bapt. July 20, 1746; m. (1) July 23, 1768, Mary Hood of Topsfield, who d. June 30, 1776, at York; m. (2) May 3, 1777, Mary Sargent of York, who d. Mar. 1, 1832, aged 88. He settled in York, where he d. in 1820. His will, made Nov. 23, 1818, was proved Aug. 14, 1820.

Children, by first wife :

1. *John*, b. Sept. 19, 1769.
2. *Moses*, b. Mar. 9, 1771; m. Sarah Mitchell.
3. *Jeremiah*, b. May 20, 1772.
4. *Israel Putnam*, b. Aug. 14, 1775.

By second wife :

5. *Thomas*, b. Apr. 5, 1778.
6. *Elizabeth*, b. Nov. 12, 1780.

* Essex Deeds, 168: 258.

7. JOSEPH⁴ SAFFORD (*Thomas*,³ *John*,² *Thomas*¹) was born in Ipswich in March 1704/5. He married Mary Chase July 30, 1728. He was a joiner by trade. Between 1736 and 1739 he moved his family to Sutton where he remained several years before settling finally in Hardwick, where he was living by 1751. Either he or his son Joseph taught the Hardwick school in 1753. After his death his son Joseph took his mother to his home in Woodstock, Vt.

Children, the first six baptized in Ipswich:

- i. ELEANOR, bapt. in Ipswich June 27, 1729; d. Dec. 13, 1730.
- ii. JOSEPH, bapt. Oct. 25, 1730; m. in Hardwick Oct. 26, 1753, Martha Powers, who d. in Woodstock, Vt., Mar. 31, 1804, aged 73; he d. in Woodstock Jan. 19, 1798. He was a housewright and with Joseph Allen built the Hardwick meeting-house at their own risk in 1771. Commissioned lieutenant in Capt. Daniel Wheeler's company of militia in 1771, member of the Hardwick Committee of Correspondence, 1774-1775.

Children, born in Hardwick:

1. *Jesse*, b. Feb. 9, 1755.
 2. *Eleanor*, b. Oct. 23, 1757.
 3. *Martha*, b. June 11, 1759.
 4. *Joseph*, b. June 22, 1760.
 5. *Mary*, b. Apr. 4, 1763.
 6. *Challis*, b. Feb. 6, 1765.
 7. *Lucinda*, b. Jan. 8, 1771; d. Feb. 8, 1773.
- iii. ANNA, bapt. Nov. 28, 1731; m. in Hardwick Nov. 25, 1756, Israel Olmstead.
 - iv. CHALLIS, bapt. Sept. 9, 1733; m. (1) in Hardwick July 10, 1755, Rebecca Winslow; m. (2) Feb. 8, 1760, Lydia Warner. He was a physician and served in the French War in Col. Ruggles' regiment as surgeon in 1757 and as surgeon's mate in 1759. Dr. Safford d. before June 21, 1771, when an inventory of his estate was entered. Mrs. Safford m., second, Dr. Jonas Fay of Bennington, Vt., Nov. 20, 1777.

Children, by first wife, born in Hardwick:

1. *Elizabeth*, b. Dec. 7, 1755.
2. *Anna*, b. Aug. 27, 1757; d. Apr. 7, 1759.

By second wife:

3. *Anna*, b. Feb. 22, 1761.
 4. *Jonas*, b. July 23, 1763.
 5. *Jonathan*, b. Feb. 27, 1766.
 6. *Robert*, b. July 17, 1768.
 7. *Challis*, b. Apr. 15, 1771.
- v. WILLIAM, bapt. Dec. 29, 1734; d. Aug. 26, 1735.
 - vi. WILLIAM, bapt. June 6, 1736; possibly the clerk wrote William in error for Phillip.
 - vii. PHILIP, described as twenty years old and born in Ipswich in a French War muster-roll of 1756. He served in five campaigns, 1755-1759, first as a drummer (1755), drum-major (1757), later

as a lieutenant (1759). He was one of the leaders of the people against the justices in the "Westminster Massacre," Mar. 13, 1775, after his removal to Rockingham, Vt. In the Revolution he served at Ticonderoga in 1777 and was a member of the Rockingham Committee of Safety in 1778. He d. Apr. 14, 1814, aged 74. His wife, Elizabeth Bigelow, d. in Springfield, Vt., in Feb. 1825, aged 83.

Children, recorded in Springfield:

1. *Sally*, b. Sept. 11, 1769.
2. *Rebecca*, b. Apr. 18, 1774.
3. *Joel* (possibly), d. Aug. 30, 1777.
4. *Philip*, b. Feb. 2, 1781.
5. *A child*, still-born, July 8, 1783.
6. *Mercy*, b. May 9, 1788.
7. *Noah*, b. Oct. 9, 1790.

viii. EBENEZER, b. June 7, 1739, at Sutton; m. in Hardwick Nov. 24, 1759, Abial Higgins, who m., second, Dec. 29, 1761, Israel Johnson. He served in the French War in the campaigns of 1757, 1759 and 1760 (sergeant), and is stated to be twenty-one years old in a 1759 muster-roll.

Child, born in Hardwick:

1. *Ebenezer*, b. Dec. 9, 1759; lived in Chesterfield, N. H.
- ix. MARY, b. Apr. 7, 1742, at Sutton; m. in Hardwick June 29, 1762, Azariah Wright of Westminster, Vt.

8. DANIEL⁴ SAFFORD (*Thomas*,³ *John*,² *Thomas*¹) was the executor of his father's and his step-mother's estates and seems to have occupied the paternal farm in Ipswich. Of his four wives the first (int. March 10, 1732) was Abigail Foster who died April 12, 1736, and the second (int. October 30, 1736) Hannah Hovey who died January 13, 1753. He married, third, November 22, 1753, widow Elizabeth (Nicholson) Herbert of Salem, who died December 21, 1777, aged 65, and finally (int. October 17, 1778), Sarah Pulcifer who survived him and died, his widow, January 20, 1798, aged 82, "of a great cold." He died May 24, 1796, aged 90, "of a pain in his breast."

His will, dated February 5, 1784, was proved September 6, 1796. Calling himself a yeoman, of Ipswich, he left the lower room with a bed-room partitioned off from it in his mansion house to his wife Sarah, together with all the furniture that she brought with her and other suitable provision. His clothing was to be divided between his four sons. The sons Daniel, Abraham and William were each given 6s., while to William also went £10 and an interest in a lot of land at Turkey Hill. His daughter Hannah was to have the use of the front chamber as long as she remained unmarried, £20 and all of the household furniture, and his grand-

son Moses Pinder 5s. The executor and residuary legatee was his son Ebenezer. Witnesses: Sarah Lowater, Mary Foster, Nathan Foster.*

Children by first wife, bapt. in Ipswich:

- i. DANIEL, bapt. Sept. 1, 1734; m. (1) Lydia Caldwell, int. Apr. 21, 1758, in Ipswich; m. (2) Thankful Goodhue; d. June 24, 1818, at Essex, N. Y.

Children, the last five born in Rowley:

1. *Abigail*, bapt. Sept. 30, 1759.
 2. *Rebecca*, m. at Rowley Jan. 1, 1788, Nathan Caldwell of Ipswich.
 3. *Ebenezer*, bapt. Apr. 6, 1766, in Ipswich; m. Sept. 7, 1790, Elizabeth Ellison at Salem.
 4. *Lydia*, bapt. July 7, 1768, in Ipswich.
 5. *Hannah*, b. July 22, 1770; m. Dec. 17, 1793, Joshua Plummer of Newbury.
 6. *Thomas*, b. Jan. 6, 1773; m. Jan. 5, 1792, Sally Osborn at Salem.
 7. *Elizabeth*, b. June 29, 1775; m. John Whitney.
 8. *Nathaniel*, b. Dec. 21, 1777; m. at Salem Dec. 2, 1799, Betsey Eveleth.
 9. *Sally*, b. Sept. 10, 1780; m. Joel French.
- ii. ABRAHAM, bapt. Apr. 4, 1736; m. Martha Dennis, int. Nov. 26, 1757, in Ipswich. He was in the fight at Lake George Sept. 8, 1755, under Col. Moses Titcomb, and was wounded in the right arm. He settled in Andover, where nine children are recorded, but by 1770 he was a cabinet-maker and inn-keeper in Salem. After the Revolution he moved to Londonderry, N. H., and from there to Bath, N. H., where he d. Jan. 5, 1829.

Children:

1. *Patty*, b. May 15, 1759; d. June 27, 1759.
2. *Patty*, b. Apr. 28, 1760; m. June 20, 1781, Daniel Russ of Methuen.
3. *Elizabeth*, b. Nov. 30, 1761.
4. *Abraham*, b. Nov. 5, 1763.
5. *John*, b. Mar. 16, 1766.
6. *Theodore*, b. Dec. 29, 1767.
7. *Hannah*, b. Oct. 2, 1769.
8. *Mary*, b. Apr. 3, 1772, at Salem.
9. *James*, bapt. Mar. 13, 1774, at Salem.
10. *Sarah*, bapt. Feb. 16, 1777, at Andover.
11. *Isaac*, bapt. Nov. 1, 1778.

By second wife:

- iii. HANNAH, bapt. May 17, 1738; a legatee of her step-grandmother, Sarah (Scott) Safford, in 1761; d., unmarried, at Salem Dec. 4, 1822, aged 84.
- iv. ABIGAIL, bapt. Dec. 28, 1740; not named in her father's will.
- v. MARY, bapt. May 30, 1742; a legatee of her step-grandmother, but not named in her father's will.
- vi. ELIZABETH, m. in Ipswich Oct. 4, 1765, Moses Pinder.

* Essex Probate, 364: 432.

- vii. EBENEZER, bapt. Apr. 3, 1748; m. (1) in Ipswich, Apr. 9, 1772, Lucy Haskell, who d. June 19, 1788; m. (2) in Ipswich Apr. 2, 1789, Eunice Fitts, who d. May 6, 1819, aged 76; he d. of consumption Aug. 23, 1815, aged 67. A yeoman, of Ipswich, he made his will Aug. 10 and it was proved Sept. 5, 1815. He left the entire estate to his wife Eunice during her widowhood, after the payment of legacies to his five children, and named his son Ebenezer executor.*

Children, named in his will:

1. *Hannah*; m. in Ipswich May 10, 1796, Capt. Daniel Lord.
2. *Lucy*; unmarried in 1815.
3. *Ebenezer*, b. Aug. 27, 1775; m. Dec. 21, 1808, Hannah Osborne at Danvers.
4. *William*, b. Mar. 27, 1779; m. Louisa Knowlton of Kennebunk at Wells, Apr. 2, 1801.
5. *Susanna*; m. Dec. 24, 1815, Nathan Safford.

By third wife:

- viii. WILLIAM, bapt. Feb. 22, 1756; a baker by trade; moved to Salem, where he m. (1) Dec. 25, 1779, Thankful Goodale, who d. May 4, 1785, aged 29, and (2) June 7, 1792, Abigail Swasey, who d. Jan. 7, 1843, aged 86; he d. Feb. 27, 1847, aged 91.

Children, born in Salem, by first wife:

1. *Elizabeth*, bapt. June 18, 1781.
2. *William*, b. Apr. 2, 1783.
3. *Joshua*, b. Feb. 8, 1785.

By second wife:

4. *Henry Swasey*, b. July 9, 1793.
5. *Abigail*, twin, b. July 25, 1798.
6. *Thankful*, twin, b. July 25, 1798.
7. *Elizabeth*, b. June 13, 1801; d. Oct. 11, 1812.
8. *Edward*, b. Jan. 13, 1803; d. at sea on the brig *Comet*, aged 19.†

9. JOHN⁴ SAFFORD (*Thomas*,³ *John*,² *Thomas*¹) married in Ipswich, int. September 13, 1735, Martha Haskell. They settled in Harvard where he died June 2, 1782, in his seventy-fourth year. She survived until April 20, 1807, when she was ninety-six years of age. He was seated in the fifth seat in the Harvard meeting-house in 1766, but with increasing age was promoted to the second seat in 1775.

Children:

- i. MARTHA, bapt. Jan. 9, 1736; d. Jan. 27, 1736.
- ii. MARTHA, bapt. Apr. 2, 1738; m., int. Jan. 8, 1757, Nathaniel Howard of Newbury at Ipswich.
- iii. ELEANOR, bapt. Apr. 28, 1740; m. June 16, 1763, Joshua Pierce of Shirley at Harvard.
- iv. JOHN, bapt. July 17, 1742; m. Jan. 31, 1765, Mehitable Farnsworth at Harvard. They settled at Washington, N. H., where at the first town meeting he was elected selectman and town clerk.

* Essex Probate. 387: 445.

† Newspaper of Mar. 11, 1823.

Children :

1. *John*, b. in Harvard Aug. 12, 1765; d. in Dexter, Me., in 1822.
 2. *Martha*, b. in Harvard Mar. 11, 1767.
 3. *Mehitable*, b. June 18, 1769; d. in infancy.
 4. *Stephen*, b. in Washington Nov. 21, 1771; d. May 31, 1777.
 5. *Mark*, b. May 12, 1773; d. Aug 29, 1777.
 6. *Simeon*, b. May 17, 1775; d. May 27, 1775.
 7. *Simeon*, b. July 29, 1776; d. in Dexter, Me., in 1845.
 8. *Mehitable*, b. Oct. 10, 1779; d. Dec. 28, 1785.
 9. *Mark*, b. Aug. 10, 1782; m. Jan. 30, 1807, Mercy Barrett.
 10. *Lucy*, b. Apr. 6, 1788; d. Nov. 13, 1800.
 11. *Rev. Ward*, b. Apr. 6, 1788; Yale College, 1812; m. (1) Mar. 23, 1819, Hannah Ward; m. (2) Oct. 1, 1841, Mary Burnham. He changed his name to *Stafford*, on the mistaken theory that that was its original form.
- v. **ABIGAIL**, bapt. July 15, 1744; m. (1), int. Apr. 8, 1764,* her cousin Enoch Safford of Newbury, at Harvard; m. (2), int. Mar. 24, 1767, Charles Bailey of Newbury.
 - vi. **WARD**, bapt. Aug. 2, 1747; m. at Harvard Apr. 26, 1774, Priscilla Randall of Stow; "minute man" at Cambridge under Capt. Fairbank Apr. 19, 1775; selectman of Harvard 1781, 1801, 1804-1806; d. Dec. 1, 1820, aged 73; she d. Aug. 29, 1822, aged 75.
 - vii. **RUTH**, bapt. Apr. 8, 1750; m. at Harvard Dec. 6, 1770, Samuel Haskell.
 - viii. **EUNICE**, bapt. July 12, 1752; m. at Harvard Dec. 26, 1771, Elijah Wildes, jr., of Shirley.
 - ix. **WILLIAM**, bapt. Jan. 12, 1755; m. Apr. 29, 1778, Sarah Scollay, who d. in Shirley Jan. 24, 1838, aged 79; a "minute man" at Cambridge under Capt. Isaac Gates, Apr. 19, 1775, and later a coporal under Capt. Asa Whitcomb; retailer of spirits at Harvard, 1776-1781.

Children :

1. *A child*, d. Nov. 10, 1778.
2. *A child*, d. Aug. 14, 1780.
3. *Sarah*, b. Apr. 17, 1781.

10. **NATHAN**⁴ **SAFFORD** (*Thomas*,³ *John*,² *Thomas*¹) was baptized in Ipswich March 16, 1712. He moved to Boston where he was married to Lydia Stetson by Rev. Thomas Foxcroft October 10, 1737. She was certainly the mother of his daughter and probably of his son. His second wife, married in Boston February 7, 1744, was Elizabeth Davis. He died before his father, in whose will (1753) his two children are named, and with whom they probably lived after the death of their parents.

Children :

- i. **MARY**, b. Dec. 27, 1738, in Boston; m. in Ipswich, int. July 1, 1758, Benjamin Caldwell.
- ii. **THOMAS**, b. about 1740; m. at Medford July 31, 1764, Sarah Kettell; lived in Dedham, Watertown and Roxbury.

* This date in the Harvard record, and June 4, 1764 in the Newbury record.

Children :

1. *Thomas*, bapt. Aug. 24, 1766, at Dedham; m. (1) in Concord Aug. 30, 1791, Elizabeth Fosdick, who d. in Lancaster March 11, 1818, aged 49; m. (2) June 9, 1819, Anna Brigham of Marlboro, who d. in Barre May 11, 1858; he d. in Lancaster June 20, 1825, aged 59.
2. *Sally*, bapt. July 14, 1771, in Roxbury; m. at Cambridge Apr. 2, 1793, Aaron Everett.
3. *Benjamin*, bapt. Apr. 4, 1773, at Roxbury.

11. JAMES⁴ SAFFORD (*Thomas*,³ *John*,² *Thomas*¹) was baptized in Ipswich June 27, 1714. He was ten years old when his mother died and it is very probable that he was brought up by his Cheney grandparents in Newbury, where he lived all of his adult life. He was generally called in deeds a tailor, sometimes a yeoman. He married first, Hepsibah Hale in Newbury October 7, 1736. She died November 3, 1753. On September 5, 1754, he married Rachel Poor, who died September 30, 1759. Thirdly, he married, April 5, 1763, Florence Jaques. She was living on December 9, 1790, when he stated "whereas my present wife Florence when she married me had furniture etc., if she survive me it is to return to her heirs, excluding my children."*

In 1766 he deeded to his son James Safford, Jr., mariner, a house lot on Merrimac street in Newburyport, in 1786 to his daughter Anna Tilton, widow, eight rods bounded by his own land, and in 1797 to his son John a house and one and a third acres on Merrimac street.† There is no record of his death nor of that of his third wife.

Children, born in Newbury, by first wife :

- i. STEPHEN, b. Feb. 18, 1738; m. in Biddeford, int. July 20, 1762, Sarah Clay; no further record found and his name does not appear on the Maine Census of 1790.‡
- ii. ENOCH, b. Oct. 31, 1740; m. his cousin Abigail Safford of Harvard, int. June 4, 1764; d. before 1767 when she m. Charles Bailey of Newbury, at Harvard.
- iii. JAMES, b. Oct. 21, 1742; apparently had a first wife who d. before Dec. 12, 1772, when he m. (2) Mary Winter. He was a private in Capt. Gideon Woodwell's detachment of "minute men" which marched to Cambridge on Apr. 19, 1775. He also served in Capt. Stephen Kent's company from July 13 to Dec. 9, 1775. He was a mariner, and d. before Jan. 17, 1781, when his father was appointed to administer his estate, Jacob Knight and Ezra Moody on his bond. After the allowance of the widow's dower, the estate, its total value £112, was found to be bankrupt. His brother John bought the house and fifteen rods of land on Merrimac street for £81 on Aug. 21, 1788.§ The widow m. Jacob Hale July 7, 1783.

* Essex Deeds, 153: 9.

† Essex Deeds, 145: 217; 163: 97; 164: 46.

‡ Miss Sybil Noyes has a plausible theory that he d. before 1771 and that his widow m. Caleb Hopkinson of Buxton.

§ Essex Probate, 354: 290; 357: 264.

Children, baptized in Newburyport:

1. *Anne*, bapt. Jan. 19, 1766.
 2. *Moses*, bapt. Oct. 25, 1767; m. at Turner, Me., Mar. 16, 1790, Joanna Pettingill.
 3. *Mary*, bapt. Nov. 26, 1769; d. Mar., 1776, aged 7.
 4. *A child* of "Enoch jr." d. Feb. 10, 1776, aged 2½. There was certainly no Enoch Safford, jr., married in 1776. Possibly the record should be *Enoch*, son of James Safford, jr.
 5. *Mary*, bapt. Mar. 17, 1776; m. Sept. 26, 1794, Samuel Pettingill.
- iv. ANNE (or Anna), b. July 4, 1744; m. Nathaniel Tilton, int. Sept. 20, 1766. (*See Tilton.*)
- v. JOHN, b. Aug. 8, 1746; m. (1) at Sutton Dec. 6, 1770, Ruth Hayden, who d. June 13, 1810, aged 56; m. (2) at Newburyport Sept. 19, 1811, Jane (Noyes) Pearson, who d. Feb. 3, 1832, aged 69; he d. Dec. 21, 1829, aged 83. His will, carpenter, made Nov. 27, 1829, provides for the care of his wife Jane, who was insane. The house and 15 rods of land which he bought from the estate of his brother James was left to his niece Hepsibah Tilton with all the household furniture except what his wife brought with her at marriage. The land is described as bounded easterly on Water street, southerly by Wormstead's land, northerly and westerly by Hale's land. The residue went to Pike Noyes, who was named executor.*
- vi. RICHARD, bapt. Mar. 26, 1749; no further record.†

By second wife:

- vii. HANNAH, b. Nov. 13, 1755.
- viii. MOSES, b. Sept. 16, 1759; from the names of his children it is obvious that he was the Moses Safford, with wife Joanna, who settled in Poland, Maine, by 1790.

Children, born in Poland:

1. *James*, b. Nov. 24, 1790.
2. *John*, b. April 5, 1792.
3. *Moses*, b. Jan. 14, 1794.
4. *Anne*, b. July 12, 1795.

12. STEPHEN⁴ SAFFORD (*Thomas*,³ *John*,² *Thomas*¹) was baptized in Ipswich February 10, 1716. He was married in Boston by Rev. Andrew Eliot May 17, 1744, to Sarah Champnics, whose name was anglicized to Jarvis by her descendants. He was a sail-maker and lived in Ipswich, although he seems to have had Gloucester connections as well, the vital records of that town containing several items regarding his family.

The "wife of Stephen Safford" died in Ipswich August 16, 1766. † He died in Ipswich in July, 1767. §

His will, dated June 18, 1767, directs that his two youngest

* Essex Probate. 407: 315.

† A Richard Safford was listed as living in Stokes County, North Carolina, in the Census of 1790.

‡ The published Gloucester records say "Aug. 16, 1776, aged 40 years, 1 month, 16 days." the year being erroneous.

§ The Gloucester records say "in Ipswich July 22, 1767, aged 50."

children, Abigail and Nathan, be supported and educated until they come of age. To eldest son Stephen, £5 above his brethren. The residue to his five children, Stephen, Sarah, Lydia, Abigail and Nathan. Executor: his brother Daniel. Witnesses: John Bly, Nathan Foster.*

In 1784 the five children sold one-half an acre in Ipswich to their cousin Simeon Safford.†

Children:

- i. SARAH, b. Apr. 10, 1748; m. (1) John Derby of Lynn July 16, 1770; m. (2) Matthew Captel Liapchik (Leach), int. Jan. 27, 1781.
- ii. STEPHEN, b. Nov. 29, 1750; m. in Gloucester May 29, 1774, Experience Herring. He settled in Bakerstown (Poland), Me., as a farmer, but was late of Minot in 1814 when his heirs sold his land. His widow was living in Turner in 1835.‡

Children, born in Poland:

1. *Lydia*, b. July 4, 1775; m. Joseph Herrick before 1814.
 2. *Stephen*, b. Nov. 3, 1777; m. at Minot Nov. 27, 1805, Phebe Davis.
 3. *Benjamin*, b. June 9, 1780; m. at Minot Nov. 28, 1805, Esther Lane.
 4. *Sally*, b. June 20, 1783; m. William Saunders of Livermore before 1814.
 5. *Daniel*, b. Mar. 13, 1788; m. at Bridgewater June 18, 1810, Betsey Warren.
 6. *Elizabeth*, b. May 21, 1790; d. May 3, 1800.
 7. *John*, b. Aug. 8, 1793; of Livermore in 1814.
 8. *Judith*, b. Sept. 18, 1796; unmarried in 1814.
- iii. LYDIA, b. Oct. 10, 1753; m. (1) George Foster Mar. 20, 1773; m. (2) Stephen George May 18, 1783
 - iv. ELIZABETH, b. Mar. 10, 1757; d. Apr. 3, 1757.
 - v. NATHAN, b. Apr. 11, 1758; d. 1759.
 - vi. NATHAN, b. June 5 (or 6), 1760; m. at Salem Sept. 29, 1785, Elizabeth Foster. They settled in North Yarmouth, Me. He was a hatter. His heirs sold his North Yarmouth property to Jeremiah Ring Apr. 24, 1827.§

Children, born in North Yarmouth:

1. *Nathaniel Foster*, b. June 13, 1786; m. (1) in Salem Dec. 5, 1808, Sally Smith; m. (2) at Hamilton Oct. 10, 1813, Hannah Woodbury.
2. *Nathan*, b. July 22, 1788; m. Dec. 24, 1815, Susan Safford of Ipswich; d. at New Orleans Jan., 1833.
3. *William*, b. Apr. 22, 1790; d. May 1, 1790.
4. *Abigail*, b. May 22, 1791; m. Dec. 1, 1808, Reuben Curtis.
5. *Betsey*, b. Aug. 22, 1793; m. July 3, 1811, Benjamin Pratt.
6. *Desiah*, b. Feb. 24, 1796; d. Mar. 13, 1796.
7. *Rebecca*, b. Mar. 10, 1797; m. May 1, 1815, John York.
8. *Mary B.*, b. May 9, 1799; m. May 30, 1827, Joel R. Peabody.

* Essex Probate, 314: 131.

† Essex Deeds, 142: 92.

‡ Cumberland Deeds, 69: 257; 141: 2.

§ Cumberland Deeds, 117: 302.

The Ancestry of Phoebe Tilton

9. *John Derby*, b. Oct. 22, 1801; m. June 27, 1824, Jane B. Field.
 10. *James D.*, b. July 28, 1804; m. (1) July 6, 1833, Catherine Conville at Philadelphia; m. (2) Jan. 8, 1852, Elizabeth M. Jeffrey.
 11. *Dr. William*, b. Aug. 14, 1807; m. Jan. 27, 1839, Mary Springer.
- vii. ABIGAIL, b. Sept. 30, 1763; m. May 31, 1796, John Leonard of Salem.

XIV
LOW, OF IPSWICH

LOW

THOMAS Low is first mentioned in the records of Ipswich on April 6, 1641, when he was granted ten acres of upland at Chebacco next to his previous ten acres, in exchange for the ten acres "due to him by grant to Mr. Rogers Company" near the mile brook by Mr. Appleton's farm. Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, the Ipswich minister, had emigrated to New England in 1636, and from the above record it would appear that Low was among those who accompanied or followed him to Ipswich. Mr. Rogers had been rector of the parish of Assington, co. Suffolk, and it is quite probable that Low was the Thomas Lowe who married Margaret Tod on June 22, 1630, at Polstead, co. Suffolk, three miles from Assington, and that they were the Thomas and Margaret Lowe who had a son Thomas baptized at Groton May 8, 1631, and a son John baptized at Boxford March 2, 1633/4. Groton is a scant three miles while Boxford is about two miles from Assington. Both parishes are in co. Suffolk. Also at Boxford is the baptismal record, on June 17, 1632, of Margaret, daughter of *John* and Margaret Lowe. There is no other mention of *John* Lowe in the register at this period. Granting *John* to be the parson's error for Thomas, we have the baptism of three Lowe children corresponding in name, age and order to the three oldest children of Thomas Low of Ipswich.

Low was born about 1605, his age being estimated at fifty-five in 1660. He was a maltster and a successful farmer at Chebacco. Like many of his fellow townsmen, he carted material for the bridge in 1646 and subscribed toward Major Denison's salary in 1648. He was fined for not appearing to serve on a jury in 1655, but was on the trial juries of 1656 and 1663, and the grand jury of 1667. Abigail Story, aged 15, was serving Low's wife in 1669.

If Low's first wife came to New England with him, she completely escaped the records. His wife Susanna, who survived him, was possibly a widow from Watertown when he married her as she went or returned to that place after his death and died there August 19, 1684.

A Bible "Imprinted at London by Christopher Barker, Printer to the Queenes most excellent Majestie, dwelling in Pater Noster Rowe at the signe of the Tygreshead Anno 1576," on a blank leaf of which are written "Susan Low her book 1677 May 19" and "Thomas Low his Book," has descended in the Low family.

Thomas Low died in Ipswich September 8, 1677. His will was made April 20, 1677. His wife Susanna was to have the things which she brought with her at marriage, the use of the room in which he lay and of the things therein. His son John was to keep for her the cow which she liked best. "Also I give unto my wife one fourth part of her labor that she hat Spunn both Lening & woolen, & Also she shall have her beere as she hath now & also use of the fire." John was to rear a shoat for her yearly, and she was to have a garden plot and land in which to sow half a peck of flax seed. She was to be paid 30s. a year in such things as she needed and to have £5 to dispose of as she wished (at death). If she left John he was to pay her 40s. a year, to be sent to Boston or Charlestown. To son John, all land and housing in Ipswich. To son Thomas £30. To daughter Margaret £40 and to daughter Sarah £40, to be paid within two years of his death. To grandchildren Thomas Low £5, Margaret Davison £5, Sarah Safford £5, and Sarah Low £5, to be paid when they were twenty-one or on their marriage days. Residue to son John, executor. Witnesses: John Chute, Mary Chute. The inventory of simple things tallied £290.*

Children, born in England:

- i. THOMAS, born in 1631 or 1632 ("about 37" in 1669) and possibly bapt. in Groton, co. Suffolk, May 8, 1631; m. in Ipswich July 4, 1660, Martha Borman who d., his widow, Jan. 22, 1720, in her 79th year (gravestone); d. April 12, 1712, aged 80 (gravestone). He lived in Chebacco, Ipswich, where he bought land of Daniel Ringe in 1664, and was deacon of the Chebacco church from 1679 until his death, acting as parish clerk during the absence of Rev. John Wise in the Quebec expedition under Sir William Phips. He and his wife headed a petition in favor of their neighbor Thomas Wells, accused of "slandorous speeches against the worshipful magistrates" in 1668. In 1669 he was deputy-marshal of the county court. He served on trial juries in 1676 and 1680 and took the Freeman's Oath in 1682. He and his wife signed the petition in favor of John Proctor and his wife, accused of witchcraft, in 1692. In 1698 he was overseer of the poor. He saw service in King Philip's war, his son Jonathan receiving a grant in Narragansett No. 1 (Buxton) because of it in 1733.

Deacon Thomas Low of Ipswich, maltster, made his will June 17, 1708, and it was admitted to probate May 5, 1712. His wife Martha was to live in the lower room and chamber in the new end of their house, with privilege of the cellar, and to have two cows kept for her winter and summer for her life, a horse to ride on, a little garden and detailed provision of pork, cider, wool, flax, wood, all movables in their dwelling, etc. To his son Jonathan Low, the house in which Jonathan was then living, one-half the tillage and pasture land and the land bought of John Burnham. To his son Samuel Low, who had taken care of his father and mother, "all

* *Probate Records of Essex County*, III: 175.

the housing, land and common rights I now enjoy," except what was given to his mother, also the stock, tools of husbandry and carpenter's tools. To his son David Low, £100 in good merchantable pay. To daughters Martha Dodge, Joanna Dodge and Abigail Goodhue, 10s. each. To daughter Sarah Low £30. Executors: sons Jonathan and Samuel Low. Overseers: Capt. William Goodhue, Nathaniel Rust, jr. Witnesses: John Cogswell, jr., Adam Cogswell, Nathaniel Low, jr.*

Children, born in Ipswich:

1. *Thomas*, b. April 14, 1661; m. Dec. 2, 1687, Sarah Symonds, daughter of Harlackenden Symonds; d. Feb. 8, 1697/8, in Gloucester. He was survived by his widow and three children, Symonds (b. about 1689, m. Dec. 8, 1719, Sarah Davis, m. (2) June 17, 1725, Deborah Low), Thomas (b. Oct. 3, 1692), Elizabeth (b. Nov. 10, 1695, m. Sept. 15, 1718, Benjamin Davis), another son, John (b. Oct. 28, 1697) having died young. Symonds Low released his interest in the estate of his grandfather Deacon Thomas Low to his uncles Jonathan and Samuel Low in 1712.† Sarah Low of Gloucester, widow of Thomas Low, decded to her three children Symonds Low, Thomas Low and Elizabeth Davis, her rights in her father's lands at Lamerrell river, Dover, Coxhall and "eastern parts" in 1731.‡
 2. *John*; m. Anna —; d. Nov. 29, 1695. Administration on the estate of John Low of Ipswich, cooper, was granted to his widow, Anna Low, Jan. 6, 1695/6.§ On June 16, 1712, John Low, Thomas Low and Annah Low, children of John Low, cooper, deceased, released all interest in the estate of their grandfather Deacon Thomas Low to their uncles Jonathan and Samuel Low.||
 3. *Jonathan*, b. July 7, 1665; m. March 8, 1692/3, Mary Thompson.
 4. *David*, b. Aug. 14, 1667; m. Dec. 28, 1699, Mary Lamb who d. March 3, 1735; d. June 2, 1746.
 5. *Martha*, b. March 10, 1669; m. Nov. 16, 1694, Richard Dodge.
 6. *Nathaniel*, b. June 7, 1672; d. July 30, 1695.
 7. *Sarah*; m. int. Nov. 6, 1708, Nathaniel Webster of Haverhill who gave a receipt for her legacy from her father Oct. 29, 1714.
 8. *Samuel*, b. in 1676; d. June 6, 1723, in his 48th year.
 9. *Johannah*; m. (1) Jan. 24, 1699, Antipas Dodge; m. (2) int. Sept. 19, 1708, Joseph Hale of Boxford.
 10. *Abigail*, b. April 25, 1687; m., int. Jan. 31, 1707/8, Joseph Goodhue.
- ii. MARGARET, possibly bapt. in Boxford, co. Suffolk, June 17, 1632; m. in Ipswich April 8, 1657, Daniel Davidson; d. July 8, 1668.
- iii. JOHN, possibly bapt. in Boxford, co. Suffolk, March 2, 1633/4; m. (1) Dec. 10, 1661, Sarah Thorndike; m. (2) by 1674 Dorcas —; d. about 1705/6 when on Jan. 28 administration on the estate of Mr. John Low of Ipswich was granted to his son Thorndike Low.¶

* Essex Probate, 310: 427-9.

† Essex Probate, 310: 460.

‡ Essex Deeds, 58: 185.

§ Essex Probate, 305: 107.

|| Essex Probate, 310: 460.

¶ Essex Probate, 308.

He was a maltster and farmer. In 1700 he was seated in the Ipswich meeting house with the elderly men. In 1697 he deeded all of his housing and lands in Ipswich to his son John Low, jr., with the provision that he, the grantor, have a life interest in one-half of the property.*

Children, by first wife, born in Ipswich:

1. *John*, b. April 24, 1665; m. in Portsmouth Jan. 16, 1701/2, Joanna Partridge; d. in Portsmouth May 24, 1713. The widow m. Aug. 8, 1716, Axwell Roberts. In 1708 he deeded to his brother Thorndike Low their father's homestead of eight acres in Ipswich.† He was a maltster and house-carpenter, and served Portsmouth as selectman from 1710 until his death.
2. *Elizabeth*, b. Oct. 18, 1667; m. June 23, 1687, John Groves of Beverly.
3. *Margaret*, b. Jan. 26, 1669.
4. *Thorndike*; m. (1), int. July 2, 1709, Mary Chapman who d. Jan. 12, 1736; m. (2), int. Aug. 17, 1743, widow Mary Chapman.

By second wife:

5. *Dorcas*, b. 1674; m. in Gloucester Nov. 12, 1690, Elias Elwell.
 6. *Martha*, b. Sept. 1679.
 7. *Joseph*, b. May 18, 1681.
 8. *Hannah*, b. July 13, 1685; m. in Gloucester Nov. 25, 1707, John Hadley, jr.
 9. *Alice*, b. Nov. 18, 1686; m. in Gloucester, int. Dec. 24, 1709, Joshua Elwell.
- iv. *SARAH*, b. about 1637 ("about 23" in 1660); m. John Safford. (*See Safford.*)

* Essex Deeds, 14: 56.

† Essex Deeds, 36: 218.

XV

BAILEY, OF SALISBURY

BAILEY

1. JOHN BAILEY, born about 1585, is traditionally said to have lived in Chippenham, co. Wilts, and, with his son, to have been a passenger on the ill-fated ship *Angel Gabriel* which was cast away at Pemaquid in the great storm of August 15, 1635, at the end of a long voyage from Bristol.* The experience was so terrifying, the story continues, that he did not dare to return to England, and his wife and other children were unwilling to run a similar risk to join him in America. In any event, in 1649 the court decreed that he, "having used sufficient means to procure his wife over from England, and she utterly refusing to come," should not be constrained to go over to her, still using what means he might to persuade her to come to him.†

Bailey and his son settled in Salisbury, where he had land granted him in the divisions of 1640, 1642 and 1643, also a fishing grant in the Powwow river in 1642. He was a commoner of the town in 1650. He and his family lived quiet and respectable lives and their names seldom appear in the court records. He brought two suits against Mr. Samuel Winsley in 1649, but withdrew them before trial, and in the same court Philip Challis withdrew a suit of trespass against Bailey. He was freed from all training in April, 1649, allowing the military company of Salisbury 5s. yearly. In 1650 he moved to Newbury, where he died November 2, 1651.

John Bailey made his will October 28, 1651. To his son John he left his house and land in Salisbury for life, with remainders to John's son Joseph and his younger brother (James), they to pay their oldest brother John £40 as his grandfather's gift. John, his son and executor, was to pay his mother £6 a year, his brother Robert £15 and his sisters £10 apiece, but only on condition that they came to New England. In case they did not come but sent by messenger for their portions, they were to receive 5s. apiece. His executor was to pay the passages of those that came over. To his son John Bailey's children, a young beast apiece, "their father is to breed these beasts for every of his children till these beasts groeth to cows or Oxen." Overseers: my brother John Emery sen. of Nubery and Mr. Thomas Bradbury of Salisbury.‡ Witnesses: William Ilsley, John Emery, jr. After his signature was added a devise of the house and land he had bought

* This tradition was first printed by Joshua Coffin in his *History of Newbury*, 1845.

† *Records and Files*, I: 166.

‡ John Emery was his brother by reason of the marriage of their children.

from Valentine Rowell to the wife and children of William Huntington. This substantial legacy probably indicates some relationship, but not that of father and daughter. The will was proved March 13, 1652. The inventory added up to £271.*

Children:

2. i. JOHN, born in England about 1613.
- ii. ROBERT, living in England in 1651.
- iii. A DAUGHTER, living in England in 1651.
- iv. A DAUGHTER (and possibly others), living in England in 1651.

2. JOHN² BAILEY (*John*¹), born in England, was twenty-two years old when he came to America with his father in 1635 and settled in Salisbury. By 1641 he had married Eleanor Emery of Newbury. He received grants of Salisbury land in the divisions of 1640 and 1643, was one of the original Amesbury commoners in 1654 and had a grant of land there in 1658. The births of his children were recorded in Newbury from 1644 onward, possibly indicating that his wife went to her old home to have her children, but by 1661 Bailey had moved his family to Newbury permanently. He was a weaver by trade. Eleanor Bailey became an active Newbury midwife.

Bailey took the Freeman's Oath in October, 1669, and the Oath of Allegiance in 1678, when he was sixty-five years old. He served on trial juries in 1654, 1659, 1662, 1665 and 1675, and on the grand jury in 1667. He was a selectman of Newbury in 1663 and constable 1673-1674, his son Joseph being his deputy.

In 1654 John Bailey signed the petition in favor of the outstanding liberal, Lieut. Robert Pike, and with all of the many signers was subjected to severe pressure by the Massachusetts Bay government. He "acknowledged that he was sorry" for his action, thus taking a weak stand in a matter of basic political rights. Another great controversy raged in Newbury in 1671 between Rev. Mr. Parker and Mr. Edward Woodman and their adherents in which Bailey took the Woodman side and subscribed to the act suspending Mr. Parker. For this he was fined 13s. 4d.

During King Philip's war Bailey supplied a saddle, bullets, powder, a horse, cheese, bread and a knapsack to the troops, for which he made a claim for £1 : 7 : 7 in 1678. In 1678 John Miller sued John Emery and John Bailey for keeping his children from him.† Bailey died in Newbury in March, 1691, widow Eleanor Bailey surviving until 1700.

* *Probate Records of Essex County*, I: 145.

† See *Ancestry of Sarah Miller*, W. G. Davis, p. 5.

The will of John Bailey of Newbury was made December 30, 1690, and proved March 31, 1691. To his wife Eleanor he left all of his estate not already disposed of by deed or gift to his sons, she to leave it to his children. To son Joseph, a great brass kettle and a gun. To son James, a gun that was his grandfather's. To son Isaac, a freehold in Newbury with all privileges in commons, a rate lot of land in the upper woods, a great pot and iron dogs. To son Joshua, all land in the town of Amesbury bought from Capt. Bradbury except four acres sold to Mr. Goodin. To his daughters Rebecca Brown, Sarah Cheney and Rachel Poor, 5s. each. Executrix: wife Eleanor. Witnesses: Tristram Coffin, David Kely, Ruth Rogers. The inventory, listing no land except that at Amesbury, amounted to £158.*

Administration on the estate of Eleanor Bailey, late of Newbury, widow, was granted to her son Joshua on December 23, 1700. A net estate of £15:8:8 was to be divided between her seven children.†

Children, the last eight recorded in Newbury:

- i. REBECCA, b. in Salisbury Nov. 24, 1641; m. Aug. 22, 1661, Isaac Brown.
- ii. JOHN, b. in Salisbury May 18, 1643; d. June or July 22, 1663.
- iii. SARAH, b. Aug. 7, 1644; m. Oct. 8, 1665, Daniel Cheney. (*See Cheney.*)
- iv. JOSEPH, b. April 4, 1648; m. (1) Priscilla Putnam; m. (2) widow Sarah (Poor) Sawyer. He bought land in Maine, was of Arundel in 1700, of Casco Fort (Falmouth Foreside) in 1702/3 and of Arundel "late of Newbury" in 1703. He was killed by Indians in October, 1723.
- v. REV. JAMES, b. Sept. 12, 1650; m. (1) Sept. 17, 1672, Mary Carr who d. in Killingworth, Conn., Oct. 28, 1688; m. (2) Mary — who d. in Roxbury Oct. 23, 1717. Graduating from Harvard College in 1669 he became the first minister of the parish of Salem Village in 1671. His wife's sister married into the Putnam family as did two of his own brothers, and he had the support of that powerful clan, but there was much opposition to "settling" him, the parish controversy finally reaching the General Court. That body, overreaching itself, ordered that the church settle Mr. Bailey and pay him £60 a year, but this decision was ignored and Bailey retired in 1679. From 1682 to about 1691 he preached at Killingworth, Conn., going to Roxbury in the latter year and practising as a physician. He died after a very distressing illness Jan. 20, 1706/7. His brothers Isaac and Joshua came from Newbury for his funeral.
- vi. JOSHUA, b. Feb. 17, 1652/3; d. young.
- vii. ISAAC, b. July 22, 1654; m. (1) June 13, 1683, Sarah Emery; m. (2) Sept. 5, 1700, Rebecca Bartlett.
- viii. JOSHUA, b. April 20, 1657; m. Elizabeth Putnam; *d.s.p.* Will, June 15-Aug. 6, 1722.
- ix. RACHEL, b. Oct. 19, 1662; m. Feb. 16, 1679/80, Samuel Poore.
- x. JUDITH, b. Aug. 13, 1665; d. Sept. 20, 1668.

* Essex Probate, 304: 318.

† Essex Probate, 307: 69.

XVI

EMERY, OF NEWBURY

EMERY

1. JOHN EMERY was living in the parish of Romsey, Hampshire, England, in the last years of the sixteenth and the early part of the seventeenth centuries. The existing parish register of Romsey begins in 1569/70, and, as there are no Emery entries until 1594, it is probable that John came there from some other parish. The name Emery is not common in Hampshire, but scattered individuals are named in the Subsidy Rolls, 1620-1628, in the villages of North Badesley, Bisterne, Upham, Middleton and Forton. As he himself was not listed in a subsidy during this period, it is evident that he owned no land in Romsey and had small personal wealth. The Hampshire probate records at Winchester contain fifteen Emery wills made between 1502 and 1652, the testators living in the parishes of Fareham, Longparish, Tichfield, Middleton, Waltham, Winchester, Eversleigh and Southampton, and an examination of those of the Romsey neighborhood gives us no hint as to the origin of John Emery.

He was presumably the John Emery who was buried at Romsey June 25, 1627. Margery Emery, who was buried September 14, 1610, and Anne Emery, who was buried November 1, 1626, may one or both have been his wives. On the other hand, it is quite possible that Anne was his granddaughter, a child of his son John, and that Margery was his own daughter. There are three other entries in the register which can be connected with him only by guess: (1) John Emery, buried June 16, 1594, may have been his son or his father. (2) Thomas Emery who married Thomasine Carter October 24, 1597, may have been his brother or a more distant relative. There are no children of this couple recorded. (3) Ellen Emery, baptized September 7, 1601, her parents not named, was not his child unless she was a twin of his son Anthony who had been baptized nine days previously.

His certain children are:

2. i. JOHN, bapt. Mar. 29, 1599.
- ii. ANTHONY, bapt. Aug. 29, 1601.
- iii. HUGH, bapt. Oct. 6, 1604.

2. JOHN² EMERY (*John*¹) was baptized at Romsey March 29, 1599. He sailed from Southampton for New England on the ship *James* on April 5, 1635, with his brother Anthony and their families, and landed at Boston on June 3. He settled in Newbury where he combined his trade as a carpenter with inn-keeping. He had an early town grant of half an acre for a house

lot, added to it by his own initiative in 1637 (the addition was regularly granted to him in 1638), and was given twenty-two acres in the "great field beyond the new town" as a "divident" in 1644.

The Emerys and others of his parishioners migrated under the influence of Rev. Joseph Avery, the vicar of Romsey, who came to New England in 1634 and who was drowned on a voyage from Newbury to Marblehead in 1635. In the inventory of Avery's estate is an item "Due to him from John Emery, carpenter, 07: 00: 00." The record continues "John Emery denyes his debt; but Richard Knight, Nicholas Holte, & John Knight, all three of Newbury* can & will testify & prove it to be due."† Possibly Emery borrowed the £7 from Parson Avery to help pay the ocean passage money of himself and his family.

He was made a freeman June 2, 1641. Thereafter, he served Newbury in numerous capacities, being one of a committee of three to value town lands in 1644 and serving on the county trial jury (1648, 1659, 1660, 1672, 1673, 1675, 1678), the grand jury (1651, 1662, 1667), as constable (1655), clerk of the market (1656), and selectman (1661). He took the oath of allegiance in 1677. In various depositions and records his age was set down as seventy in 1670, seventy-three in 1671, eighty-one in 1679 and eighty-two in 1681. Too old for active service he supplied a new saddle and bridle, a sword and belt, powder and bullets for use in King Philip's war, and in addition received 2s. 6d. for "Cureing a soldier."

Emery was a courageous man who did not hesitate to back his opinions with action. When Lieut. Robert Pike was in difficulty with the colonial government in 1654, John Emery and his son John signed a petition in Pike's favor which so irritated the authorities that they appointed a commission to examine (and seemingly to intimidate) the signers. "John Emery demanded (to see) their commission and a sight of the petition before he would answer. He then said that the commissioners had no power to demand who brought the petition to him."‡ In 1657 he signed a certification of William Titcomb's good character. He dissented from the vote in favor of a school and schoolmaster in 1658, and also headed an agitation and petition about the local military company so vigorously that the court found that he and his sons John Emery and John Webster had been busy and

* And all three from Romsey.

† *Probate Records of Essex County*, I: 3.

‡ *Records and Files*, etc., I: 366.

forward to disturb the peace of the place and had occasioned much trouble to the court, and therefore admonished them.*

In 1663 he was in court for entertaining Quakers. Evidence was given that two men and two women Quakers held a meeting in his house, after which the two men "were entertained very kindly to bed and table & John Emmerie shook them by the hand and bid them welcome." Both he and his wife said that they would not put Quakers out of their house and used arguments for the lawfulness of it. For this offense he was fined £4, costs and fees, and although the selectmen and fifty of his fellow citizens joined in his petition to the General Court that the fine be remitted, it met with denial.† Also in 1663 he was fined for entertaining Dr. Henry Greenland at his house for four months. Greenland seems to have been a travelling doctor with a keen eye for women. In Newbury he became involved with Mary, wife of John Rolfe, and they were charged with adultery. Elizabeth Webster, step-daughter of John Emery, was living with Mary Rolfe during Rolfe's absence, and the Emery household contributed much testimony on both sides of the case.‡

In the Parker-Woodman church controversy at Newbury in 1671, Emery was an active partisan of Mr. Woodman, and was fined 13s. 4d.§

The name of John Emery's first wife, married in England, is not known. An interesting possibility is the marriage of John Emorye and Alice Grantam on June 26, 1620, at Whiteparish, Wiltshire, about eight miles from Romsey. In this connection it should be noted that one Andrew Grantham, servant of Francis Plummer, died in Newbury in 1668. The Emery genealogy supplies what appears to be a synthetic name, Mary, and a date for her death, April, 1649, which does not appear in the printed vital records of Newbury. If we give him the benefit of the doubt, we may say that his first wife died before September, 1646, when he was fined for his attentions to Bridget, wife of Henry Travers, and bound not to frequent her company.|| His second wife was a widow Mary Webster and the probable date of their marriage, October 29, 1647, a year after her first husband's death and when his bond in the Travers case was discharged.¶

* *Records of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay*, 4: 1: 362.

† *Records and Files*, etc., II: 67.

‡ *Records and Files*, etc., III: 48-51.

§ *Records and Files*, etc., IV: 355.

|| *Records and Files*, etc., I: 110.

¶ See article "John Emery's Wife," by Clarence A. Torrey, *The American Genealogist*, vol. 17, p. 96.

Emery was very active in caring for the property of John Webster, his last wife's first husband, and as guardian of the younger Webster children. It seems probable, from his will, that he made provision for his children by his first marriage before or at the time of his marriage to the widow Webster. In 1675 he deeded one-half of his Newbury house and land to his son Jonathan.* He died November 3, 1683.

The will of John Emery, sr., was made May 11, 1680, and proved November 27, 1683. To his daughter Ebenezer Hoag he gave an acre and a half at the west end of his home-lot. To his son Jonathan, all his land and housing in Newbury, on condition that he do certain work on the farm for the benefit of his father and mother during their lives and that, after their deaths, he pay to the estate £50 in five annual installments. From this £50, with his chattels and movables, his widow was to have £10 to dispose of as she pleased at her death, £10 was to go to "my grandchild Mary Emerson,"† and, after the payment of debts, the residue was to be divided between his six children and Mary Emerson. Overseers: sons John Emery and Abram Merrill (his wife's son-in-law), with Joseph Bailey (his grandson) as substitute in case of vacancy. Witnesses: Joseph Pike, James Ordway. His son John was granted administration *cum testamento annexo* and filed an inventory of £263, included in which was a set of surgeon's tools, valued at £2: 10: 0, possibly held in payment of the gallant Dr. Greenland's board-bill. Among the debts listed was £6: 10: 0 due to the widow as a remainder of what was promised her at marriage, further evidence of a pre-marital family settlement. After his brother's death, Jonathan Emery was appointed administrator *d.b.n.* June 8, 1696, but declined to serve and John Emery, a grandson, was named in his stead.‡

The will of widow Mary Emery, who died April 28, 1694, its preamble in an easily deciphered hand, was written in its more important parts by an inexperienced penman who succeeded in making much of it illegible. It was dated April 1, 1693, and proved November 11, 1696. To her son Jonathan Emery she gave £10 "that my Husband gave me in his last will," and forgave him

* Essex Deeds, 3: 246.

† His wife's grandchild, Mary Emerson, was alive and unmarried at this time, and I see no reason to suspect the legatee was the child of an unknown Emery. This legacy, even with her share of the residue added, was not large. His first family, not mentioned in the will by name, was middle-aged and well established, and his wife's young granddaughter may have lived with the Emerys and very possibly gained a generous place in the affections of an old man of eighty-three, who, as we have seen, was given to strong feeling.

‡ Essex Probate, 302: 100; Suffolk Probate, 305: 181.

30s. which he had borrowed of her. To daughter Ebenezer "the rest of my wearinge cloths."* Witnesses: James Gulmar, Elizabeth Bricket.†

Children, by first wife:

- i. ELEANOR, bapt. at Romsey, as Helena, Nov. 7, 1624; m. John Bailey, Jr., of Newbury before Nov. 1641. (*See Bailey.*)
- ii. ALICE; m. John Chater. Either she or an unidentified child was living in 1680, when her father made his will.
- iii. JOHN, bapt. at Romsey Feb. 3, 1628/9; m. Mary ———; will made Aug. 3, 1693, proved Sept. 26, 1693; widow Mary d. in Newbury Feb. 3, 1709.
- iv. ANNE, bapt. at Romsey March 18, 1632/3; m. at Newbury Nov. 25, 1648, James Ordway; d. March 31, 1687, aged 56.

By second wife:

- v. EBENEZER (a girl); b. in Newbury Sept. 16, 1648; m. April 21, 1669, John Hoag.
- vi. JONATHAN, b. in Newbury May 13, 1652; m. Nov. 29, 1676, Mary Woodman; she d. Sept. 13 and he Sept. 29, 1723.

* For the Webster legacies and a discussion of the will, see *The Ancestry of C. S. and J. S. Pillsbury*, by Mary Lovering Holman, p. 877.

† Essex Probate Files, No. 8994.

XVII
HALE, OF NEWBURY

HALE

1. THOMAS HALE of Watton-at-Stone, co. Hertford, England, was probably born about 1575. He married at Watton on October 19, 1601, Joan Kirby of Little Munden, co. Hertford.* He was buried at Watton-at-Stone October 19, 1630. His widow married at St. Helen's Bishopsgate, London, on October 17, 1633, John Bydes of "Muden Parva," yeoman, and was living at Little Munden in 1640 when her mother made her will. The name Hale was a common one in Hertfordshire, particularly in the yeoman class, from early times. No indication of the origin or ancestry of Thomas Hale has yet been found.

Hale made his will October 11 and it was proved December 9, 1630. To his wife Joan and son Thomas he left five pieces of land, including the "house close," until the next Michaelmas, on condition that they bestow necessary reparation upon the house and pay to Mistress Cranfield the rent due on land held from her at Michaelmas. For ten years thereafter these lands were devised to his wife, his son Thomas to occupy them as her tenant, paying her yearly £4 in half-yearly payments. To his daughter Mary Hale, the meadow and rye close of about seven acres for three years, then to his daughter Dorothy Hale for three years, then to his daughter Elizabeth Hale for three years, then to his daughter Dionis Beane or her son Henry Beane for one year, his son Thomas Hale to occupy the land as their tenant, paying a rent of £5 a year. To his son Thomas, four other fields, together with all goods and chattels, except a bed, linen and other fit furniture for one chamber which was to go to his wife Joan. Executor, son Thomas Hale. Overseer: brother Francis Kirby. Witnesses: Francis Kirby, John Hale.†

Children, baptized at Watton-at-Stone:

- i. DIONIS, bapt. August 15, 1602; m. at Watton Sept. 29, 1624, Henry Beane.
- 2 ii. THOMAS, bapt. June 15, 1606.
- iii. MARIE, bapt. Oct. 8, 1609; possibly m. ——— Whale and had a son Joseph Whale mentioned in the will of his great-grandmother Kirby in 1640.
- iv. DOROTHY, bapt. March 28, 1613.
- v. ELIZABETH, bapt. Aug. 31, 1617.

2. THOMAS² HALE (*Thomas*¹) was baptized at Watton-at-Stone, co. Hertford, on June 15, 1606. He was probably ap-

* See a recapitulation of the evidences of the English ancestry of Thomas Hale of Newbury by George Andrews Moriarty in *The American Genealogist*, 22: 180.

† Archdeaconry of Hitchin.

prenticed in his youth to a glove-maker or leather-dresser in near-by London, where at St. Helen's Bishopsgate on December 11, 1632, Thomas Hale of Watton *apud* Stone, glover, and Thomasine Dowsett, maiden, were married, their license having been issued at the Faculty Office the day before.

Thomasine Dowsett was a daughter of Gabriel Dowsett, miller, of Harlow, co. Essex, who made his will (Gabriel Doucet), which was probated in January, 1627/8, on December 14 (1627). He left to his son Thomas Dowsett his copyhold tenement near Harlow market, in the tenure of George Chapman. To his daughter Tomazen Dowsett, £90. To his son Thomas, three roods of land in Harlow March, on condition that he pay Tomazen £10 more. To his grandson Thomas Freeman, 5s. at the age of five. To his daughter Joan, 5s. To his wife Mercy and son Thomas, executors, the care of the mill and other chattels. Witnesses: Edward Sprangler, John Jocelyn.* The widow Mercy Dowsett seems to have gone to live with the Hales at Watton in her old age. On June 25, 1635, administration on the estate of Mercie Dowsett of Watton-at-Stone, widow, was granted to her daughter Thomasine, wife of Thomas Hale.†

Thomas Hale's uncle, Francis Kirby, was a friend of John Winthrop and much interested in the Puritan migration to New England, and, in addition, the Hales lived in a neighborhood from which many families had departed to the London ships bound for Massachusetts Bay in the years following 1630. When they, too, decided to emigrate, it was under unusually fortunate circumstances, for in May, 1637, the uncle saw them off, bearing his letter to his friend Gov. Winthrop, saying: "These are now to intreat you that you would be assistante to the bearer hereof (Thomas Hale my neere kinsman) in your councell and advise to put him in the way how & where to settle himselfe in a hopefull way of subsisteinge with his family. He hath brought with him all his estate, which he hath heer or can have dureinge the life of his mother, my sister. He had almost 200 li. when he began to make his provision for this voyage. I suppose the greatest halfe is expended in his transportation, and in such necessaries as will be spent by him & his family in the first use; the lesser halfe I suppose he hath in money, and vendible goods to provide him a cottage to dwell in, and a milshe cow for his childrens sustenance. I suppose his way will be to hire a house or a part of a house for

* Archdeaconry of Middlesex for Essex and Herts., register Browne, fo. 176.

† Archdeaconry of Huntington for Herts., Act Book 5, fo. 8.

the first year, vntill he can looke out & buy or build him a dwellinge, wherein as in other things I shall intreat you to direct him.”*

The Hales first settled in Newbury, where Thomas Hale first appears on the town records when he was appointed a hayward on August 10, 1638. On February 23, 1642, at a general town meeting, the “stinting of the commons” was entrusted to a committee of which he was one, and on December 7, 1642, he was one of the ninety-one freeholders of the town. Whether he acquired his land by town grant or by purchase does not appear, but on January 27, 1640, he sold to Joseph Carter fifty-two and a half acres at the end of Newbury town upon Merrimac ridge.†

About 1645 Hale moved to the new settlement at Haverhill, on the Merrimac river, where he lived for about seven years. In 1646 he was elected selectman in the first Haverhill town government, and in 1647 he was appointed by the General Court a “commissioner to end small causes,” or local justice. He was appointed to keep the ferry across the river in 1648 and elected constable in 1649. Until 1650 he was still disposing of Newbury property, selling four acres to John Pike, jr., in 1647, thirty-six acres to James Jackman in 1648, six acres to Henry Somerby and three acres to Pike in 1650.‡

In 1650 he was being granted Newbury land by the town and in 1652, “of Newbury, late of Haverhill,” he exchanged his Haverhill homestead for Stephen Kent’s Newbury property, consisting of a house and eighty acres. He bought another house and twenty-three acres from John Tillotson in 1655, possibly the house sold to Joseph Muzzy in 1656/7.§

By 1657 the Hales were again on the move, to Salem this time. There he bought a house and one acre from John Smith on January 28, 1658/9, selling it in less than two months to Thomas West.|| In his Salem conveyances he is called a leather-dresser or a glover. His son Thomas, who had married in Salem and returned to Newbury, was given by his father the Newbury homestead bought from Stephen Kent and several other parcels lying on Newbury neck in 1661. By 1662 the family had made its final move, following young Thomas to Newbury, having sold a Salem house, barn and small lot of land to John Knights, mason.¶

* Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, 4th Series, vol. VII, p. 19.

† Ipswich Deeds, 1: 2.

‡ Ipswich Deeds, 1: 51, 66, 69, 80.

§ Ipswich Deeds, 1: 330.

|| Essex Deeds, 1: 48, 59.

¶ Essex Deeds, 2: 69.

Thomas Hale served on county trial juries in 1647, 1650, 1651, 1657, 1658, 1664, 1667, 1669, 1673, 1674 and 1678, and on juries of inquest in 1661, 1671 and 1677. In 1651 he was sued for slander by Thomas Davis, and although he was acquitted, he was "admonished for reproachful speeches concerning the plaintiff's birth." Surprisingly for such a good citizen, he dissented from the vote to build a school-house in Newbury in 1652. He took the Freeman's Oath in Salem in 1658, and, "aged 50," was sergeant of the Salem military company. In the Parker-Woodman controversy he sided with Mr. Parker while his son Thomas was a Woodman adherent. There must have been much religious argument in the family circle. For the troops in King Philip's war he supplied a saddle, a gun, a sword and belt, two pounds of powder and bullets, a pouch and "snapsaicke," oats, provisions, posting and fifty-four pounds of powder and bullets. He took the Oath of Allegiance in Newbury in 1678, "aged 74."

On March 11, 1669, Thomas and Thomasine Hale conveyed to their son John a house and twelve acres of land on Gravel hill in Newbury. Thomas died in Newbury on December 21, 1682, and Thomasine a month later on January 30, 1682/3.

Children :

- i. THOMAS, bapt. at Watton-at Stone Nov. 18, 1633; m. at Salem May 26, 1657, Mary Hutchinson, who m. secondly Feb. 5, 1694/5, William Watson of Boxford; d. Oct. 22, 1688. He was a selectman of Newbury in 1665, 1675, 1678. His will, made March 20, 1686/7, codicil Feb. 20, 1687/8, was proved Dec. 12, 1688.
3. ii. JOHN, bapt. at Watton-at Stone April 19, 1635.
- iii. SAMUEL; m. at Newbury July 21, 1673, Sarah Hsley. They moved with many Newbury neighbors to Woodbridge, New Jersey, where he was constable, justice of the peace and marshal. She d. in Woodbridge Jan. 16, 1681/2. Samuel Hale, Esq., d. of small-pox Nov. 5, 1709.
- iv. APPHIA, b. in 1642. She was "about 17" when she testified for her father in *Muzzy v. Hale* in 1659. She m. Nov. 3, 1659, Benjamin Rolfe.

3. JOHN³ HALE (*Thomas*,² *Thomas*¹) was baptized at Watton-at-Stone, co. Herts., April 19, 1635. He was about two years old when the family emigrated to New England. He married in Newbury December 5, 1660, Rebecca Lowell, who died June 1, 1662. His second wife, whom he married December 8, 1663, was Sarah Somerby, who died in June, 1672. Thirdly, he married a young widow, Sarah (Ring) Cottle, who died January 19, 1698/9. Sergeant John Hale died in Newbury June 2, 1707.

He was a house carpenter and, like his father, was a sergeant in

the local militia company. In 1669 he was seated in the front seat of the north gallery in the meeting-house. He owned a negro named Juniper in 1674. He was licensed to "make sturgeon" by the town in 1677, which presumably was the drying of the fish and not an early example of luxury trade in caviar. In 1678 he took the Oath of Allegiance, aged forty-two, and repaired the bridge over Newbury river, receiving £1: 4: 0. He served Newbury as constable in 1682.

Hale's first land purchase was a house and twelve acres in Newbury from John and Sarah Allen in 1661, during his first marriage.* In 1669 his father gave him a house and twelve acres at Gravel hill.† His only other large purchase was one of thirty acres from Frances and Thomas Thurlow in 1690.‡ In 1694 he conveyed to his son John a house, which John had occupied for several years, and fourteen acres of land.§ When his son Henry was about to be married in 1695, he gave him one-half of the homestead, consisting of a house, barn, shop and twelve acres, in return for maintenance, and on February 9, 1699/1700, he gave Henry the whole property in consideration of support for the remainder of his life.||

Children, born in Newbury:

By first wife:

4. i. JOHN, b. Sept. 2, 1661.

By second wife:

- ii. SAMUEL, b. Oct. 15, 1664; d. May 15, 1672.
 iii. HENRY, b. Oct. 20, 1666; m. Sept. 11, 1695, Sarah Kelly who d. Oct. 21, 1741.
 iv. THOMAS, b. Nov. 4, 1668; d. *s.p.* before 1710.
 v. JUDITH, b. July 5, 1670; m. Nov. 24, 1692, Thomas Moody.

By third wife:

- vi. JOSEPH, b. Nov. 24, 1674; m. Dec. 25, 1699, Mary Moody who d. April 16, 1753; d. Jan. 24, 1755.
 vii. BENJAMIN, b. Aug. 11, 1676; d. Aug. 31, 1677.
 viii. MOSES, b. July 10, 1678; m. (1) Elizabeth Dummer who d. Jan. 15, 1703/4; m. (2) Mary Moody who d. July 17, 1757. Harvard College, 1699. Pastor of Byfield parish, Newbury, from 1706 until his death on Jan. 16, 1743/4.

4. JOHN⁴ HALE (*John*,³ *Thomas*,² *Thomas*¹) was born in Newbury September 2, 1661. He married in Newbury October 16, 1683, Sarah Jaques. He died March 4, 1725/6.

* Ipswich Deeds, 2: 117.

† Ipswich Deeds, 3: 265.

‡ Essex Deeds, 10: 146.

§ Essex Deeds, 18: 46.

|| Essex Deeds, 12: 108; 15: 145.

Hale was carpenter by trade. He took the Oath of Allegiance in Newbury in 1678, aged seventeen. On December 19, 1694, his father gave him fourteen acres of land and the house which he had lived in for several years, seventeen acres of meadow and one-half of the 96th lot in the upper woods beyond Artichoke river.* He bought several other small lots of land between 1687 and 1705. On May 4, 1722, he deeded to his son Samuel his house and about twenty acres, Samuel to possess one-half of it at once and the other half after the death of his parents. Samuel did not survive this gift a year, however, and on February 4, 1722/3, the other children, John, Richard, Stephen, Benjamin, Rebecca Poor, Sarah Weed and Margaret quit-claimed to their father all rights in the homestead which they had obtained through Samuel's death. Their father then deeded the homestead to his son Benjamin, provided that he make certain payments to his (Benjamin's) sisters, Rebecca, Sarah, Margaret, Mary, Ruth and Anne. He also gave land to his sons John, Richard and Stephen.†

Administration on the estate of Mr. John Hale of Newbury was granted to his son Benjamin on March 27, 1726. The inventory, dated March 23, 1725/6, showed personal property valued at £98.‡ On December 7, 1726, all of his children, except Anne who was not of age, surrendered their rights in their father's estate to their mother, Sarah Hale, for her support in her old age, provided that Benjamin Hale pay all of their father's debts.§

Children, born in Newbury :

- i. REBECCA, b. Feb. 18, 1684/5; m., int. Aug. 18, 1703, Jonathan Poor.
- ii. JOHN, b. June 24, 1686; m. (1) July 25, 1716, Patience Dole who d. Mar. 30, 1719; m. (2) Mary. ———.
- iii. RICHARD, b. and d. Sept., 1688.
- iv. HENRY, b. Aug. 28, 1689; d. Feb. 2, 1689/90.
5. v. RICHARD, b. Nov. 9, 1690.
- vi. STEPHEN, b. April 12, 1693; m. Oct. 15, 1718, Sarah Swett; d. in 1744, *s.p.*
- vii. SARAH, b. Feb. 3, 1694/5; m. July 19, 1720, John Weed, jr.
- viii. SAMUEL, b. March 21, 1697; d. in 1722, unmarried.
- ix. BENJAMIN, b. March 24, 1699; m. Dec. 18, 1728, Judith Swett.
- x. ANNE (twin), b. Jan. 3, d. Jan. 6, 1700/1.
- xi. MARY (twin), b. Jan. 3, d. Jan. 6, 1700/1.
- xii. MARGARET, b. Jan. 8, 1701/2; living in 1726.
- xiii. ANNE, b. Oct. 24, 1703; d. young.
- xiv. MARY, b. Dec. 28, 1704; m. Nov. 13, 1728, Henry Dole.
- xv. RUTH, b. Nov. 17, 1706; m. Dec. 12, 1727, John Peirson of Rowley.
- xvi. ANNE, b. Jan. 18, 1709/10; m. Dec. 11, 1733, Daniel Knight.

* Essex Deeds, 18: 46.

† Essex Deeds, 39: 227-229.

‡ Essex Probate, 314: 275.

§ Essex Probate, 315: 449.

5. RICHARD⁵ HALE (*John*,⁴ *John*,³ *Thomas*,² *Thomas*¹) was born in Newbury November 9, 1690. He married March 16, 1715, Mary Silver. He died in Newbury between February 22 and July 29, 1771.

He was a weaver by trade, and possibly also a fisherman as he settled at "Joppa" on the Merrimac river, in what became Newburyport, "Joppa" being principally a fishing village.

In 1717 he bought from Richard Brown of Reading three and a half acres in Newbury, presumably the same which he sold in two lots in 1771, to William Pierce, shipwright, and Moses Hale, mariner.* On June 29, 1713, he bought River Lot No. 4 on the Merrimac river from John Brown.† He and others sold to the selectmen of Newburyport land for a public highway, called Rolfe's lane, in 1735/6, and in 1772 widow Mary Hale conveyed to Patrick Tracy of Newburyport one and a half acres bounded northwesterly by Rolfe's lane.

Richard Hale's house was "on Water, now Merrimac street, near where Moses Pettengill now (1855) resides. The house is since removed, and now stands in the small alley between Merrimac and Union streets, near Woodwell's ship yard. It has long been and still is (1855) occupied by Mr. Gideon Woodwell, a connection of the Hale family."‡

The will of Richard Hale of Newbury, dated October 21, 1762, was proved July 29, 1771. To his wife Mary, while she remains his widow, he left the use of one-third of his house, lands and household furniture. To his son John, £20 to be paid within one year or when he removes from his father's dwelling, "where he now lives." To his sons Jacob, Samuel and Richard, and daughters Mary Hidden and Sarah Atkinson, 5s. each. To the heirs of his daughter Hepsibah Safford, deceased, 5s. in equal shares. Executor and residuary legatee: son Stephen. Witnesses: Joseph Coffin, Isaac Bayley, Joshua Coffin.§

Children, born in Newbury:

- i. HEPSIBAH, b. Feb. 11, 1715/6; m. Oct. 7, 1736, James Safford. (*See Safford.*)
- ii. JACOB, b. April 21, 1717; m. Jan. 11, 1738/9, Mary March of Salisbury.
- iii. MARY, b. April 29, 1719; m. Sept. 29, 1737, Joseph Hidden.
- iv. RICHARD, b. Dec. 17, 1720; m. Nov. 30, 1749, Sarah Gage.

* Essex Deeds, 128: 145, 146.

† Essex Deeds, 49: 58.

‡ *Genealogy of the Descendants of Thomas Hale*, Robert Safford Hale, 1889, pp. 127-128.

§ Essex Probate, 347: 121.

- v. SAMUEL, b. Oct. 3, 1722; m. April 18, 1745, Elizabeth Pettingill who d. Mar. 23, 1810, aged 88.
- vi. SARAH, b. April 4, 1724; m. Aug. 25, 1743, Humphrey Atkinson.
- vii. REBECCA, b. Feb. 1, 1725/6; d. July 4, 1728.
- viii. JOHN, b. Aug. 14, 1727; m. May 1, 1750, Sarah Fowler.
- ix. STEPHEN, b. Feb. 28, 1728; m. (1) Mar. 1, 1755, Martha Goodwin; m. (2), int. Sept. 29, 1767, Elizabeth Tilton; d. Dec. 22, 1778, aged 50; widow Elizabeth d. Oct. 17, 1811, aged 72.

XVIII

KIRBY, OF LITTLE MUNDEN CO.
HERTFORD, ENGLAND

KIRBY

JOHN KIRBY and Joan Cranfield were married at Watton-at-Stone, co. Hertford, on December 23, 1576. As a widow Joan Kirby lived in the neighboring parish of Little Munden, co. Hertford. William Cranfield of Watton, in his will made in 1630, mentions her as his aunt, Johane Kirby, widow, and also calls Thomas Hale the elder and Francis Kirby of London, his cousins, they being Joan Kirby's son-in-law and son.*

Joan Kirby of Little Munden, widow, made a nuncupative will October 29, 1640, in the presence of her three children Francis Kirby, Joane Bides and Ruth Brown, and of John Bides who was Joane's husband. It was proved December 2, 1640, by the executor Francis Kirby. She gave to the poor of Watton, where she was born, 20s., and to the poor of Little Munden, where she lived, 20s. Small legacies were to go to her grandchildren Ruth Cowley, Richard Kirby and Joseph Whale, to her cousins Elizabeth Isham and Mary Newton, and to her daughter Joan Bides. The residue she left to her son Francis Kirby. The entire value of her estate, by the inventory attached to the will, was £18:8:1½.†

Children:

- i. FRANCIS. He was a skinner, or dealer in hides, leather and furs, of London, living in the parish of St. Helen's Bishopsgate, where he was a churchwarden in 1638 and 1639. His first wife was widow Susan (Downing) Carter, sister of Emanuel Downing, who married the sister of Gov. Winthrop. She was buried at St. Helen's Jan. 22, 1634, "in the church in the north Ile close by the upper end of the last fourmes." He married, secondly, widow Elizabeth ———. To his first wife's son Joseph Carter, Kirby gave a letter dated April 11, 1639, introducing him to Gov. Winthrop as "my love-deserving son and faithful servant." Kirby did a large business with the colonies, exporting general supplies and importing principally beaver skins. His letters to the elder and younger Winthrop, from 1631 to 1639, show that they maintained confidential and even intimate relations, and they are written in a cultivated style with occasional Latin quotations. In the latter years of his life he was the bridge-master of London bridge, an appointive post with a salary of about £100 a year and the use of a house at the Surrey end of the bridge, called the bridge-master's house. There he died on October 12, 1661, in the parish of St. Olave, Southwark.

The will of Francis Kirby, citizen and skinner of London, now dwelling in the parish of St. Olave, Southwark, Surrey, was made July 24, 1660, and proved Nov. 1, 1661. He made his son Joshua Kirby residuary legatee and executor and appointed as overseers his sister Ruth Brown and his neighbor Mr. Matthew Robinson, citizen and grocer of London. To Mary, wife of his son Joshua

* Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 80 Scroope.

† Archdeaconry of Hitchin. See *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 35: 367-376; 44: 316.

Kirby, and their children Godsgift, Susan, Elizabeth, Phebe, Camdena and Welcome. To his sister Ruth Browne. To the poor of Little Munden. To the poor of St. Olave. To Elizabeth Turfatt, daughter of George Turfatt, grandchild of his late wife Elizabeth. To Mary Nash, widow, late wife of John Nash. To his cousin Joseph Alport, scrivener. To his cousins William Kirby and Ruth Macham, children of his late brother William Kirby. To his cousins John and William Kirby, children of his late brother John Kirby. To his cousin Elizabeth Goad. To Eunice, Rachel and Sarah Carter, daughters of Joseph Carter, deceased. To his servant Mary Bradbury.*

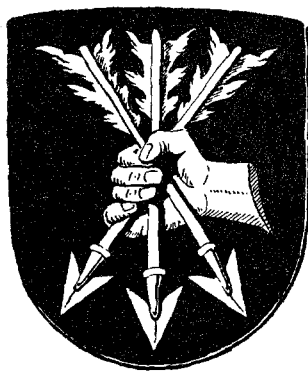
Children:

1. *Rev. Joshua*, b. about 1617. He was admitted to the Merchant Taylor's School in 1628, and on June 20, 1634, aged 17, matriculated at Oxford from New Inn Hall, receiving his B.A. in 1637 and his M.A. in 1640 and taking orders. He was imprisoned for publicly praying for King Charles I when such a course had become dangerous, but he subsequently became a strong nonconformist. He was rector of Eastwicke, co. Hertford, in 1645, but resigned before May, 1646. He was minister of Roade, co. Hertford, in 1646, curate of Putney in 1648, and in 1650 lecturer at Wakefield, co. York, where he died June 21, 1676, aged 59.
2. SARAH. Mentioned in the will of Richard Blades of London, 1634, and in the will of Elizabeth Kirby of Little Munden in 1637.
- ii. JOAN; m. (1) Thomas Hale of Watton-at-Stone; m. (2) Oct. 17, 1633, at St. Helen's Bishopsgate, London, John Bydes of Little Munden. (*See Hale.*)
- iii. JOHN. Of Little Munden, yeoman, he made his will April 23 and it was proved July 7, 1628. To the poor of Little Munden, 20s. To Richard Ward and William Ward, brothers of his wife Martha Kirby, as trustees for her, his four sons *John* the elder, younger son *John*, *William* and *Richard*, and his daughter *Elizabeth*. Executors: his brother Francis Kirby of London and his brother-in-law Thomas Hale.†
- iv. WILLIAM; died before 1660 leaving son *William* and daughter *Ruth* Macham, legatees of their uncle Francis Kirby.
- v. RUTH, b. about 1598. She m. (1) Richard Cowley of St. Botolph's without Bishopsgate, brazier, bachelor, about 24, she being described as Ruth Kirby, singlewoman, about 23, daughter of John Kirby, deceased, license being granted Nov. 21, 1621, the marriage to take place at St. Olave's, Old Jewry. William Langton of St. Giles Cripplegate, tailor, testified that Joane Kirby, mother of the said Ruth, was willing and consenting.
She m. (2) at St. Helen's Bishopsgate, Feb. 1, 1637, Edward Brown of Great Munden, co. Hertford, yeoman. Her daughter *Ruth Cowley* was mentioned in the will of her grandmother Joan Kirby in 1640.

* Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 180 May.

† Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 71 Barrington.

XIX
LOWELL, OF NEWBURY



LOWELL

THE LOWELL family has gained such distinction in its three hundred years of active life in New England that it can well afford to throw into the discard the claims to grandeur in old England made for it by the family genealogist. For into the discard most of them will have to go—Norman blood, companions of the Conqueror, the Battle Abbey Roll, the baronial house of Lovel, the noble Earl of Yvery and “Lupellus, the little wolf.”*

Having rid ourselves of these theatrical trappings we can begin the contemplation of fact in accordance with the rules of modern scientific genealogy. In 1591 the heralds made a visitation of the county of Somerset and among those summoned to prove their right to coat-armor and to enter their pedigrees was John Lowle of the parish of Walton.† He made good his claims and his coat and descent were duly registered over his signature and appear in the original manuscript of the Visitation of Somerset at the College of Arms, the coat being *Sable*, a hand couped at the wrist grasping three darts, two in saltire and one in pale, all *argent*.‡ In the visitation pedigree appears the name of Percival Lowle, son and heir of Richard Lowle in the year 1591, and, in view of the extreme rareness of both his given name and surname, and the nearness of the Somersetshire parishes mentioned in the pedigree to Bristol, with which city the emigrant Percival Lowle had a duly proven connection, it is properly conceded that the founder of the American family was the Percival Lowle of the pedigree.

How much of the nine generations of ancestry, stretching back from Percival Lowle to “W^m Lowle of Yardley in Com: Worcester,” can we consider credible without definite corroborative evidence, which the pedigree does not offer? The scientific genealogists, among whom are numbered the present-day heralds at the College of Arms, have adopted the theory that the representative of a family who entered and signed a visitation pedigree must be supposed to have known the names of his parents and his grandparents and the facts in regard to his contemporary close relations. Statements in regard to earlier ancestors cannot be accepted merely because they are entered in the visitation but

* *The Historic Genealogy of the Lovells of America*, D. R. Lowell, 1899.

† Walton is a parish a few miles southwest of Glastonbury but John Lowle's Walton was more probably Walton-in-Gordano, very near Clevedon.

‡ College of Arms, ms. G. 19 (2), 111. The pedigree printed in the *Historic Genealogy of the Lovells* appears to be a compilation, made after 1754, of various Lowle pedigrees. It is stated to be from Harleian ms. 1559, although I suspect that the author of the *Historic Genealogy of the Lovells* or his copyist in London also made some innocent additions.

must be proven by other adequate evidence.* Now John Lowle of Walton who signed the Lowle pedigree in 1591, said that he was a son of Roger Lowle and Joan Gage (or Cage) and a grandson of John Lowle, who “dyed at Clyudon in Com: Somerset,” and his wife, a “do: of Wake,” that is, a daughter of a man named Wake. The pedigree lists Richard, Percival’s father, as John Lowle of Walton’s own cousin and Richard’s father, John Lowle, as John of Walton’s uncle. Both of these relations the signer of the pedigree must have known personally. The grandparents of John Lowle of Walton and Richard were, of course, a common possession. Under these circumstances we are fully justified in accepting Richard Lowle as Percival’s father, John Lowle as his grandfather and the first John Lowle of Clevedon as his great-grandfather. In the case of John, the grandfather, we have, as will be seen, the further and decisive evidence of his will.

When it comes to Thomas Lowle, the alleged great-grandfather of John (of Walton) and Richard Lowle, and the long line of more remote ancestors, most of them married with surprising selectivity to ladies of “Norman blood,” documentary proof of their very existence must be produced and each step subjected to intelligent criticism. The visitation pedigree begins with William Lowle of Yardley in the county of Worcester and four generations later comes Richard Lowle who “died at Yardley in Worcestershire” and was buried with the Lowle coat-of-arms “on him,” which supposedly means on his tomb. There is a parish of Yardley in Worcestershire, but in treating of it the county histories make no mention of a Lowle family. In fact, in a tedious search through all available books dealing with Worcestershire’s history and records, only one Lowle reference was found. On August 2, 1375, at Lydyngton, John, Bishop of Lincoln, signed a commission to the Prior of Worcester to expedite the exchange between William Lole, rector of the parish church of Rethurby in the diocese of Lincoln, and Robert Repyndon, vicar of the parish church of Kemslyn in the diocese of Worcester.† No Lowles are listed in the Worcester subsidy rolls of 1280, 1327, 1332/3, 1346 and 1358, 1427-9 and 1603. It is, of course, impossible to believe that an armorial family, connected by marriage with distinguished houses, could escape the county’s public records so entirely, and a Worcestershire origin for the Lowles of Somerset must therefore be abandoned.

* How many of your relatives and friends can tell you the names of their eight great-grandparents, or have any knowledge of how to go about finding them?

† *Register of the Diocese of Worcester, 1301-1435*, Worcestershire Historical Society Collections, p. 346.

The first Lowle described in the visitation pedigree as connected with Somersetshire is Percival's great-grandfather, John Lowle, who died at Clevedon and married the daughter of Wake. The Wakes are an old and eminent Northamptonshire family who acquired property in Clevedon in the fifteenth century and, on the theory that the Lowles may have come into Somersetshire with the Wakes, a search of the printed Northamptonshire sources was made. It proved very rewarding. Four Lole or Lolle wills appear in the index of Northamptonshire wills from 1531 to 1638, and to them may be added two wills of Lolle testators of Northampton residence in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury index for the years 1507 and 1512. There are also Lole wills in the registries of the neighboring dioceses of Leicester and Litchfield. A Gregory Lolle was instituted priest of the parish of Winwick, co. Northampton, in 1449. A William Lole, son of John Lole of Welford, co. Northampton, plebeian, matriculated at Oxford from Christ Church in 1624, aged nineteen, and, after obtaining his B.A. and M.A. degrees, became vicar of Longborough, co. Gloucester, and rector of Pirton, co. Worcester. In a Northamptonshire muster roll of 1591, Valentine Lole was entered from the parish of Harlestone, in a subsidy roll of 1600 Henry Lole was taxed for goods in the parish of Navesbye, and in a muster roll of 1612 five Loles appear, one of them being George Lole of the Northamptonshire parish of *Yardley Hastings*. At first blush this seemed to be an explanation of "Yardley in Com: Worcester," but, surprisingly enough, it was not the correct one. The wills of the Northampton Loles, mostly too late in date for our purposes, did produce evidence that for a time at least a Lole lived in Yardley, co. Worcester, which must have been remembered by his descendants. John Lolle, gent., of the town of Northampton made his will on July 9, 1507. He was childless and left most of his property to his wife Margaret and to the church. He did, however, leave to "Thomas Lolle of Yardley, co. Worcester & to William Lolle of Assheby his brother in co. Leicester" £20 owing from the bailiffship of the town of Assheby and the keeping of the park called Bristhorp.* When Margaret Lolle came to make her will in 1512 Thomas Lolle had left Yardley and was in Warwickshire, for she left to "Thomas Lolle, yoman dwelling in Preston, co. Warwick, & to William, brother unto said Thomas, baylif of Assheby, co. Leycester," £14 equally between them of the £20 that my Lady Kateryn Hastings gave

* Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 31 Adeane.

unto her husband John Lolle.* Thomas and William Lolle were doubtless close relations of John Lolle of Northampton, most probably nephews.

Here we must stop and draw a few conclusions. The name Lole, a monosyllable, was not of Norman origin, but, like others of its kind, British or Saxon.† The Lole family of Northamptonshire was primarily of yeoman rank, and in the visitations of Northamptonshire the Loles are mentioned not at all. The early generations of the Somerset visitation pedigree, with their important alliances, are totally unproven and must be given up. With the marriage of John Lole or Lowle into the family of Wake and the marriages of his two sons, John and Roger, into landed families, it became desirable to the Lowles to acquire arms and a pedigree. The arms which they adopted are the secure possession of their Lowell descendants in England and America, for they were accepted and recorded by the College of Arms in 1591. As for the pedigree, Elizabethan heralds were, many of them, excessively obliging.

1. THOMAS LOLLE. That we have documentary evidence in the will of John Lolle, gentleman, of Northampton that a Thomas Lolle was living in Yardley, co. Worcester, in 1507 possibly justifies that the Lowell pedigree begin with him. When Margaret Lolle, John's widow, made her will in 1512, Thomas Lolle had moved to Preston, co. Warwick. He had a brother, William Lolle, who was bailiff of Ashby-la-Zouche, co. Leicester, and they were doubtless closely related to John Lolle of Northampton. As to their parentage and ancestry we have thusfar no record evidence.

The pedigree states that Thomas Lolle's wife was a "do: of Mayhouse." The name Mayhouse, if indeed it is a surname, must be excessively rare. It does not appear in any of the common books on surnames and is not found in the indices of the probate registries of Northampton, Litchfield or Worcester. The closest approach to it is Mayhow, possibly a variant of Mayo, which occurs in the distant county of Cornwall.

Probable child:

2. i. JOHN.

2. JOHN² LOWLE (*Thomas*¹), possibly born about 1485, was the grandfather of John Lowle of Walton who signed the family's

* Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 16 Fetiplace.

† Mr. I. E. Ewen, the modern authority on English names, says that Lulle was an Early English given name.

pedigree in the visitation of Somerset of 1591. He left the midlands and settled in Clevedon, co. Somerset. The visitation pedigree states that he married a daughter of the family of Wake, and this is highly probable as that Northamptonshire family acquired the manor of Clevedon in 1432.

Wake of Blisworth, co. Northampton, was, and still is, a very distinguished family. The history of its main line of descent is a scholarly chapter in the beautiful genealogical volume of the *Victoria County History of Northampton*. It was probably inevitable that Victorian, or earlier, genealogists should seize upon the legendary Saxon warrior, "Hereward the Wake" as its stemfather, but the ridicule of the school of Dr. Round has banished that dream to a deserved limbo. Nor do the Wakes need Hereward for distinction. It was Thomas Wake of Blisworth, born about 1402, who acquired the manor of Clevedon, co. Somerset, by a deed dated September 30, 1432, soon after his marriage with Agnes Lovell, daughter and co-heiress of Thomas Lovell of Clevedon.* Their son, another Thomas Wake of Blisworth, by an unknown first wife (his second wife was Elizabeth Beauchamp, daughter of Thomas, Earl of Warwick, and widow of George Neville, Lord Latimer), had three sons and a daughter, the oldest son and heir being Roger Wake of Blisworth who was born about 1452.

As it is this Roger Wake who has been adopted as the father-in-law of John Lowle of Clevedon, he requires special attention. He married Elizabeth Catesby, daughter of Sir William Catesby of Ashby-St.Leger's, co. Northampton, kt. As a follower of Richard III he forfeited his manors and lands when Henry VII obtained the throne but they were restored to him by an act of Parliament in 1487. He died on March 16, 1503/4, leaving a will† by which he left to his wife the manor of Clevedon for her life with a remainder to his second son, Richard Wake, and his wife, if he should marry, for their lives. Thomas Wake, Roger's eldest son, was twenty-five years old and more at his father's death as shown in the inquest *post mortem* on his father's estate, taken 16 Nov. 20 Henry VII, and was apparently an unsatisfactory son. He sold his interest in Clevedon to his mother by a deed of July 12, 1507, and by a fine of 6 Henry VIII (1514-1515) the manor was settled on Richard Wake, the second brother. The brass to the

* The name Lovell is a surname entirely distinct from Lole or Lowle. For an authoritative account of this family see *The Complete Peerage*, 2nd Edition, by G. E. Cockayne, VIII: 199-225.

† Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 10 Holgrave.

memory of Roger Wake in the church at Blisworth shows that he had seven sons and three daughters of whom three sons and one daughter died young. The two surviving daughters, both mentioned by their married names in their father's will, were Elizabeth Villiers and Margaret Barnard who are fully accounted for. The name Lole or Lowle is nowhere mentioned, and it is obvious that our "do: of Wake" was not a daughter of Roger and Elizabeth Wake.

A very interesting conjunction of the name Lolle with Blisworth and the Wakes occurs in a suit in Chancery brought sometime between 1529 and 1538. Edmund Knightley sued Thomas Langtre and Richard Lolle for detaining deeds relating to the manors of Blisworth and Rood, co. Northampton, whereof the late Lord John Grey, "together with the Lord Marquess that now is, his brother," was seized in fee.* The Greys were, of course, feoffees holding the title to the manors in trust for the Wakes, and Langtre and Lolle were presumably the estate bailiffs or business agents.

In each generation of the Wake family of Blisworth there were younger sons whose descendants are not dealt with in the pedigrees, some of whom must have descended to the yeoman class, and from them John Lowle's wife may have sprung. The will of an Emma Wake of Blisworth, dated 152-, and obviously that of a woman in humble circumstances, proves this point.† There is also the possibility, too often ignored, of illegitimacy.

Children of John Lowle:

3. i. JOHN, b. about 1510.
4. ii. ROGER, b. about 1515.
- iii. MARY; m. ——— Collins; left a legacy as "my sister" in the will of John³ Lowle in 1552/3. She may, of course, have been a half sister or a sister-in-law.
- iv. A DAUGHTER (possibly); m. ——— Beny and mentioned as a sister in the will of Roger Lowle in 1568.

3. JOHN³ LOWLE (*John*,² *Thomas*¹) was possibly born about 1510, but whether before or after his father's removal to Somersetshire is not known. According to the visitation pedigree he married "Apelyn do: of *Richard* Leversedge," who was doubtless in reality Apolyn Leversedge, daughter of Edmund Leversedge of "Wegington," co. Somerset.

Edmund Leversedge of "Wegington," co. Somerset, made a will which was proved July 28, 1547, leaving legacies to his wife

* Early Chancery Proceedings, VI. Bundle 649, No. 15.

† Archdeaconry of Northampton, Book D (1527-1532). fo. 189, No. 450.

Agnes, his daughters Alice, Apolyn and Agnes, and his wife's and his own god-children. His widow, Agnes Leversedge, seems from the evidence of her own will, proved in 1552, to have been a second wife who had children by a former husband named Debbon. She left property to her daughters Agnes Debbon and Isabel Dowell and to her son Richard Debden and Agnes his daughter.

The Leversedge family owed its position in co. Somerset to the marriage of an Edmund Leversedge to Elizabeth Winslade, daughter and sole heiress of Stephen Winslade who died in the 6th year of the reign of Henry IV (1404-1405) leaving her the Hundred of Frome, held by sergeantry, and the manors of Frome and Vallis. Most of this estate continued in the Leversedge family until 1706 when a Roger Leversedge devised it to Lionel Seaman, husband of his only daughter and heiress Frances Leversedge.* Apolyn Leversedge doubtless came of a younger branch of this family, but "Wegington," her father's home, is not found in the maps of Somerset or in the topographical dictionaries. There is a Wriggleton or Writhlington in the county, six miles north-west of the Leversedge seat in Frome, which is a possibility, as is also Wrington, about seven miles south-east of Clevedon.

At his death in 1552/3, John Lowle was of Portbury, co. Somerset, about seven miles from Clevedon. He made his will January 17 and it was proved March 8, 1552/3. He directed that he be buried in Portbury churchyard. He left to his sister Mary Collins a heifer, and to each of her children a sheep. To Edith —, upon her marriage, or, if she should die before marriage, to her next of kindred, two bushels of beans and two bushels of wheat. To his son Richard Lowle, "the place in that state as it is" (presumably the homestead), with all implements, apparel, hangings and stuff that is in it to the furnishing thereof. Residue to his wife Apolyn and son Richard, executors. Overseers: Willm Hardyng, Lyoile Davye of Portbury, Richard — of Bryston. Witnesses: John Wyllms, John Godwyn, John Hyll, Thomas Baylic, with others.†

Children, named in the pedigree of 1591 :

5. i. RICHARD.
- ii. EDMOND; not named in his father's will in 1552/3.
- iii. JOHN; not named in his father's will in 1552/3.

* *History of Somerset*, Rev. John Collinson, Bath, 1791, II: 187.

† This will and the two Leversedge wills were proved in the Consistory Court of Bath and Wells, all records of which were destroyed at Exeter in the *blitzkrieg*. These abstracts, possibly not full, had been obtained previously by Mary Lovering Holman who kindly allows me to use them.

4. ROGER³ LOWLE (*John*,² *Thomas*¹) was possibly born about 1515, in Northamptonshire or Somersetshire. The 1591 visitation of Somersetshire, containing the Lowle pedigree signed by his son, states that he married "Joan do: and heire of John Gage (or Cage) of Walton in Com. Somersett."

Roger Lowle made a will which was proved in 1568 in which he names his children John (a married man), Margaret, Maria, William, Andrew, Joan and James. He also mentions his sister Beny and her son John, and two women who were possibly his sisters, Margaret Perke and Alice Walkin.

Children :

- i. JOHN, b. about 1537; m. before 1568 Prudence Wikes, daughter and heiress of Henry Wikes of co. Hereford, by Jane Wikes, daughter of Nicholas Wikes of Dorington, co. Gloucester. He lived at Walton, co. Somerset, his mother's home. It was he who "appeared at the Visitation in the Countie of Somersett 1591" and signed the Lowle pedigree. On Jan. 17, 1639, John Borough, Garter, and William Le Neve, Clarenceux, certified a pedigree of John and Prudence Lowle and three generations of their descendants, from which the information here given is obtained.*

Children :

1. *Thomas*; "of Tockington, sonne and heire"; m. "Margarett dau. and coheire of John Dier of Tockington in the Countie of Gloucester."

Children :

- a. John; "of Wogelhouse in ye county of Gloucester, now living 1639"; m. "Martha dau. and sole heire of Tho: Smith of ——— neere Taunton in ye county of Som^t." Children in 1639: Thomas, Ralph, John (dyed young), Martha, Marie.
- b. William; "2d sonne."
- c. Ralph; "3d sonne dyed coming from ye East Indies."
- d. Francis; "4th sonne."
- e. Thomas; "dyed young."
- f. Marie; m. John Hubball of London.
2. *James*, "2d sonne dyed without issue."
3. *Thomas*, "ye yonger, had one onely dau. named Prudence."
- ii. MARGARET; named in her father's will in 1568.
- iii. MARY; named in her father's will in 1568.
- iv. WILLIAM; named in his father's will in 1568.
- v. ANDREW; named in his father's will in 1568.
- vi. JOAN; named in her father's will in 1568.
- vii. JAMES; named in his father's will in 1568.

5. RICHARD⁴ LOWLE (*John*,³ *John*,² *Thomas*¹) was possibly born about 1535 in Somersetshire, but whether in Clevedon or in Portbury we have no means of knowing. He married, according

* College of Arms, R. 22-49.

to the visitation pedigree of 1591, "do: of percevall" or a daughter of the family of Perceval. He is said to be listed in a Somerset subsidy of the year 1571. There is no further record of him found thusfar.

The Lowell "Historic Genealogy" leaps to the happy conclusion that this daughter of Perceval was one of the daughters of the contemporary head of that Somersetshire house, Edmund Perceval of Weston-in-Gordano, who died in 1551. Weston-in-Gordano is very near Portbury and Clevedon, and it is distinctly possible that the wife of Richard Lowle was one of Edmund Perceval's daughters, but no evidence on this point is brought forward. The match is not recorded in the Perceval pedigrees, but this proves nothing as daughters were more often ignored than not in the visitations, unless they were heiresses. On the other hand, the Percevals had been seated in Somersetshire for several centuries during which the family must have thrown out many junior branches, to one of which our "do: of percevall" may have belonged.

In any event descendants of Percival Lowle must forget the fabulous pedigree of the Percevals set forth in their printed record. In 1733 a younger branch of the Percevals acquired an earldom and became Earls of Egmont, and the first earl employed a parson, J. Anderson, D.D., to write a history of the Perceval family which was published in 1742 under the title *History of the House of Yvery*. Among less complimentary comments the new Complete Peerage* says of this work "very little of what is stated [therein] is to be depended upon from the commencement down to the 14th century." At that, a well authenticated pedigree running back to 1300 is very uncommon in the peerage, and even if deprived of their "cousin of the Conqueror," noble crusaders, etc., etc., the Percevals are to be congratulated.

Richard Lowle had in 1591 one son, but possibly several daughters not recorded in the visitation:

Child:

6. i. PERCIVAL; "sonne and heire" in 1591.

6. PERCIVAL⁵ LOWLE (*Richard*,⁴ *John*,³ *John*,² *Thomas*¹) was probably born about 1570 at Portbury, co. Somerset. He married about 1600 Rebecca ———, who died in Newbury, Massachusetts, December 28, 1645. He died in Newbury on January 8, 1664/5.

* *The Complete Peerage*, 2nd Edition, Vol. 1926, article Egmont, p. 28, note (6).

In the visitation of Somerset, 1591, Percival Lowle was entered as his father's son and heir. He is said to have been the assessor for the parish of Kingston Seymour, not far from Portbury, in a subsidy of 1597. In subsidy rolls of 1620-1621 and 1627-1628 he was listed under the parish of Portbury, as Percivallus Lowle in the first and as Percival Lowle, gent., in the second. It is commonly stated that before his emigration Lowle was a merchant in the near-by city of Bristol, which is highly probable.

In 1639, when he was an elderly man, Percival Lowle sailed for New England and settled in Newbury in the colony of Massachusetts Bay. With him came his wife, his two sons Richard and John and their wives, his two daughters, Richard Dole who had been the apprentice of John Lowle, and probably Anthony Somerby who arrived contemporaneously with the Lowles and was later associated with them. Because of their position and comparative wealth these men formed a valuable addition to the young community of Newbury.

Anthony Somerby, and so in all probability the Lowle family, crossed the Atlantic in the *Jonathan* of London in 1639. Thirteen years later Somerby, Nicholas Noyes, Samuel Hides, Thomas Gould and Frances Cook made depositions covering events of the voyage, from one of which we learn that Mr. Peter Noyes paid £50 for his and his family's passage on April 12, 1639, so it would seem that the voyage ended in New England in early summer.*

Percival Lowle himself took but little part in the affairs of the community and his name seldom appears on the records. In 1647, after the death of his son John, Mr. Lowle entered a claim against John's estate and a judgment for £40 was acknowledged by the executors. John Lowle had also owed a debt to Mr. John Vawer of Bristol, merchant, and James Mattox of Boston, cooper, Vawer's attorney in New England, obtained an execution against John Lowle's houses and lands in Newbury in satisfaction thereof. However, Percival Lowle held two notes signed by Vawer, one dated July 24, 1638, for £10 and the other dated October 11, 1638, for £20, so Vawer's position as a Newbury land owner was of short duration, John Pemberton, the constable, seizing the property consisting of two houses and two barns, six and a half acres of arable land and nine acres of "exchange land" in the new town (the present Newburyport) to satisfy Percival Lowle's claim against Vawer. These cases appear in the

* *Records and Files*, I: 263; *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 32: 407.

records of the county court under the date November 10, 1647. Percival Lowle, gentleman, deeded all of this property except the land in the new town to his son-in-law William Gerrish, merchant, on November 8, 1648.* In 1653, with his son Richard and Anthony Somerby, Percival Lowle took the inventory of the estate of his son-in-law Thomas Milward. He is consistently given the title "Mr." by the clerks.

The two daughters, Joanna and Anne, who are herein credited to Percival Lowle, are considered by several very competent genealogists to have been children of John and Elizabeth Goodale of Great Yarmouth, co. Norfolk. As a widow, Elizabeth Goodale came to New England and settled in Newbury where her daughter Elizabeth married Percival Lowle's son John. In her will Elizabeth (Goodale) Lowle names the husbands of Joanna and Anne among her four "brothers." John Goodale of Great Yarmouth, her father, had, however, made a very careful and highly genealogical will in 1625, and neither in this document nor in the regular baptismal records of his children do daughters Joanna and Anne appear. It would seem to be a sound conclusion that the husbands of Joanna and Anne were Elizabeth's "brothers" as husbands of her two Lowle sisters-in-law, and the whole atmosphere surrounding them tends to substantiate it.†

Children, born in England:

7. i. RICHARD, b. about 1602.
8. ii. JOHN, b. about 1605.
- iii. JOANNA; m. (1) John Oliver of Bristol, merchant and mercer, who d. in Newbury in 1642; m. (2) in Newbury April 17, 1645, William Gerrish; d. in Newbury June 14, 1677.

John Oliver died intestate, leaving his wife and an only daughter, aged about two years, and on March 29, 1642, John—was appointed administrator. Upon the petition of Joanne Oliver, the widow, the court ordered on June 14, 1642, that she possess the entire estate, estimated at £420, bring up the child and give her £100 at the age of eighteen or at marriage and a further £100 at the age of twenty-one. She was also given power to free a servant or apprentice. Oliver owed Walter Stephens of Bristol £19: 10: 0 and George Batherne of Bristol, soapmaker, £19. Both of these men gave powers of attorney to Christopher Oliver of Bristol, merchant, to collect these debts, Stephens calling Christopher Oliver his cousin and Batherne calling him his brother-in-law. Christopher Oliver apparently came to New England as he certified to the correctness of copies of the powers in court at Ipswich on September 24, 1644. By November, 1644, "Mrs. Joha Olliver, executrix of Mr. John Olliver" had paid both of the debts and Christopher, probably her brother-in-law, had given her acquittances.

* *Records and Files*, I: 127-9; Ipswich Deeds, I: 84.

† *The American Genealogist*, XXII: 17.

The Oliver estate had been overestimated and much diminished by debts, and in response to several petitions of Mr. William Gerrish, Joanna's second husband, a new inventory was taken and the order for payments to the little girl reconsidered. In 1649 the General Court ordered that Lieut. Gerrish should hold the property, giving security to pay Mary Oliver £135: 10: 0 in corn or cattle when she reached fourteen years of age and in the meantime to maintain and educate her.*

William Gerrish, Joanna's second husband, is said to have been a Bristol man. Possibly he came over with the Lowles as he is first noticed in Newbury in 1640. He had a distinguished civil and military career, representing Newbury in the General Court from 1650 to 1653 and Hampton in 1663 and 1664, and eventually commanding the Newbury train-band as its captain. After his wife's death he moved to Boston where he lived until his death on Aug. 9, 1687, in Salem where he was making a visit. His immediate descendants were men of much distinction in Massachusetts and New Hampshire.

Child, by first husband:

1. *Mary Oliver*, b. in Newbury June 7, 1640; m. Dec. 8, 1656, Samuel Appleton of Ipswich.

Children, by second husband, born in Newbury:

2. *John Gerrish*, b. May 15, 1646; m. Elizabeth Waldron of Dover, N. H., where he settled; captain, sheriff, representative to the New Hampshire General Court, councillor, and justice of the Superior Court of New Hampshire.
 3. *Abigail Gerrish*, b. May 10, 1647.
 4. *William Gerrish*, b. June 6, 1648; m. Ann ———; a physician.
 5. *Joseph Gerrish*, b. March 23, 1649/50; Harvard College, 1669; m. Ann Waldron; ordained in 1673; parson at Wenham.
 6. *Benjamin Gerrish*, b. Jan. 13, 1651/2; m. Oct. 24, 1676, Hannah Ruck of Salem, where he was collector of the port.
 7. *Elizabeth Gerrish*, b. Sept. 20, 1654; m. Oct. 23, 1676, Stephen Greenleaf.
 8. *Moses Gerrish*, b. May 9, 1656; m. Sept. 24, 1677, Jane Small.
 9. *Mary Gerrish*, b. April 1, 1658; m. Oct. 23, 1676, John Dole.
 10. *Ann Gerrish*, b. Oct. 18, 1660.
 11. *Judith Gerrish*, b. Sept. 10, 1662.
- iv. ANNE; m. (1), presumably in England, Thomas Millard; m. (2) in Newbury Dec. 26, 1654, Daniel Peirce who d. Nov. 27, 1677; she d. in Newbury Nov. 27, 1690.

"Mr. Thomas Millard of Newbury . . . bestowed his estate upon his wife Ann and his two children Rebecca and Elizabeth to be divided amongst them his wife to have one third part thereof and his two children thother two third pts one third part apiece . . . on the day of their marriage." This he declared in the presence of William and Ann Cotton and John Butler on Aug. 30, before his death on Sept. 2, 1653. His estate, the inventory by Percival Lowle, Richard Lowle and Anthony Somerby, amounted to £343. His house was well furnished, his wardrobe large and among articles

* *Probate Records of Essex County*, I: 15-18.

of luxury he possessed silver spoons, a silver cup, a silver salt and a gold seal. He was owed £85 in England and £63 in Virginia, a desperate debt.*

Daniel Peirce, Anne's second husband, was a widower and a blacksmith who had come to Newbury from Watertown in 1638. He made his will Nov. 12, 1677, and it was proved March 26, 1678. He entailed his estate in Newbury to his heirs male. "And whereas upon my marriage agreement with Anne my wife she was to have twenty pounds a yeare dureing her naturall life I appoint my said executor (his son Daniel) that in all conditions shee shalbe in, that he provide all such necessaryes that shee shall stand in need of and that she shall injoy her former libertyes in the house dureing her life And for my wives son in law Thomas Thorpe . . . I give him a farme at new Jarsy scituate upon Row river . . . but if he shall trouble or molest my executor for any cause he shall forfeit the said gift." The estate, worth £1897: 10: 0, was very large indeed for the times. Peirce had "negroes" worth £60.†

Children, by first husband:

1. *Rebecca Milward*, probably b. in England; m. in Newbury May 27, 1656, Thomas Thorpe.
2. *Ann Milward*, b. in Newbury Nov. 1, 1642; d. young.
3. *Elizabeth Milward*, b. in 1644; m. in Newbury Dec. 5, 1660, Daniel Peirce, her step-brother.

7. RICHARD⁶ LOWLE (*Percival*,⁵ *Richard*,⁴ *John*,³ *John*,² *Thomas*¹) was born in England about 1602 as, at his death in Newbury on August 5, 1682, his age was estimated as about eighty. His wife Margaret, whose surname is not known, survived him. She was about seventy-four years old in 1679 and was, therefore, born about 1605.‡

Whereas his brother John, who died when a comparatively young man, had begun what promised to be a distinguished career in New England, Richard Lowle was a man of little mark considering his probable educational and known financial possibilities. His only public service was performed as a member of the grand jury in 1649. Possibly, however, ill-health prevented his taking a more active part in the affairs of the town and colony as in 1653, at his own request, the court relieved him of the care of the estates of his nephews James and Joseph Lowle, "the sd Richard being very sickly and thereby uncapable to look any further after the same."§

In 1656 Richard Lowle was fined for an attempted assault on Jane Boulton. In 1671 he was released from training because of

* *Probate Records of Essex County*, I: 160.

† *Probate Records of Essex County*, III: 210.

‡ The family genealogy, followed by others, regards her as a second wife married in New England and states that Richard Lowell's first wife, another Margaret, died in Newbury on January 27, 1642, which is the date of birth of Richard Lowle's daughter Rebecca. This death record is not included in the printed *Vital Records of Newbury*, and I find no evidence of the existence of a former wife.

§ *Records of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay*, III: 302.

his age and was "one of the Brethren" on Rev. Mr. Parker's side in the Parker-Woodman controversy which split the town of Newbury into two bitter factions. His old age must have been much troubled by the several suits brought against him by his nephew Benjamin Lowle. Unable to appear in court in person, he employed Tristram Coffin as his attorney.

Richard Lowle of Newbury made his will June 25, 1681, and it was proved September 26, 1682. To his wife Margaret he left all his household goods, except his great Bible and his great pot, his house, land, orchard and meadow during her widowhood, and named her executrix. After her marriage or death, his son Percival was to have the house, barn, land and orchard (except twelve acres on the northeasterly side). Also to his son Percival, twelve acres of marsh "in the great Marshes by the Plumb bushes," five acres of marsh below Benjamin Rolfe's, two acres of marsh at Old Town, one half of his commonage, his great pot and his great Bible. He acknowledged that the meadow in Birchen Meadows which was formerly his belonged to Percival by purchase. To his son Thomas Lowle, twelve acres of upland, but, if the testator's son Samuel Lowle desired to build a house for his settled habitation, Thomas was to allow Samuel to have an acre adjoining widow Muzzy's land. If Samuel "shall refuse or relinquish his Right in the acre of land," Thomas shall pay to him £6 in current New England silver money or £10 in current pay. To his son Thomas, all of his Plum island marsh, six acres of salt marsh at Old Town and one-half of his commonage. After his wife's death his movables are to be divided between his sons Percival and Thomas. To his son Thomas, all of his cattle, and Thomas is to live in his house and have one-sixth of the apples as long as he lives a single man. To Anthony Somerby, "a booke called Mr. Hooker's politic." Witnesses: Tristram Coffin, Anthony Somerby. The estate was worth £671, most of the value being in land. The inventory was taken by Nicholas Noyes, Anthony Somerby and Daniel Pierce, and sworn to by Margaret Lowle on September 26, 1682.

Children:

- i. PERCIVAL, b. about 1639; "about 29" in 1668 and "about 30" in 1671; m. in Newbury Sept. 7, 1664, Mary Chandler.
- ii. REBECCA, b. in Newbury Jan. 27, 1641; m. Dec. 5, 1660, John Hale. (*See Hale.*)
- iii. SAMUEL, b. about 1645; "about 19" in 1664; probably abroad in 1682.
- iv. THOMAS, b. in Newbury Sept. 28, 1649; unmarried in 1682; probably d. *s.p.*

8. JOHN⁶ LOWLE (*Percival*,⁵ *Richard*,⁴ *John*,³ *John*,² *Thomas*¹) was apprenticed as "John, son of Percival Lowle, generous" to Richard Baugh, glover of Bristol, and Ann his wife on February 17, 1619, and, if, as was usually the case, he was fourteen years of age when he entered his service, he was born about 1605. Having learned his trade and gained his freedom he became a burgess of Bristol in 1629, and on September 7, 1637, he took an apprentice of his own for a term of seven years, Richard Dole, who accompanied him to New England two years later. He was married and had several children before his emigration in 1639. The family genealogy states that the name of his wife was Mary, but no record evidence of that has been found.

In his new home in Newbury John Lowle began at once to take a prominent part in public affairs, after being sworn freeman on June 2, 1641. The General Court appointed him clerk of the writs on December 10, 1641, and he was elected the town's deputy to the General Court in 1643/4. He was appointed commissioner to end small causes, or local justice, on May 14, 1645, and again on May 26, 1647. He was a trial juror in 1642 and 1646. For a few months before his death he served as recorder of births, marriages and deaths for Newbury but not as town clerk.*

After the death of his first wife, probably soon after her arrival in New England in 1639, John Lowle married Elizabeth Goodale of Newbury. He died in Newbury on July 10, 1647, and his widow survived until April 23, 1651. He was always dignified as "Mr." in the colony and town records.

John Lowle of Newbury made his will on June 29, 1647, and it was proved on October 27, 1647. To his wife Elizabeth he gave one-half of his estate in goods and land, and she was to choose property worth £20 from the residue of the estate which came from her mother. The rest of his estate was to be divided equally between his children John, Mary, Peter, James, Joseph, Benjamin and Elizabeth Lowle. "Also I doe humbly Intreate these five my christian deare loving friends & brethren, my brother William Gerrish Richard Lowele John Sanders Richard Knights & Nicholas Noice to be my Executors & Administrators of this my last will & testament as also to be the overseers of my wife and children in a friendly Christian way towards them." In case any of his first wife's children should die before receiving his portion it was to be divided among those then living, and the same in the case of his second wife's children. The children's portions were

* *History of Newbury*, Joshua Coffin, 1845; *History of Newbury*, John J. Currier, p. 639.

to be paid them when the court should judge them wise and able to manage an estate, upon the information of "Sixe of the Wise, Godly men of the Towne with the Elders." Before the goods were divided his daughter Elizabeth was to take £10 of her mother's clothes,* and his daughter Mary was to take £20 of her own mother's clothes. If his wife remarried, Mary was to live with his sister Johan Gerrish if they both were so pleased. Witnesses: Edmund Grenleife, William Gerrish, Robert Long.

The inventory gives evidence of the great quantity of clothing and furnishings that the Lowles brought with them from England. His house must have been small, for, with four acres of land, it was worth only £26, but it must have been filled to over-flowing. It would be interesting to see the black watered grosgrain suit, the five night-caps and eleven day-caps, the curtains with wrought valances, the wrought cushions, the fair cupboard cloth, the rugs and carpets, the quantities of table linen (including six drinking napkins), the flaring waistcoat, the coifs and ruff, the two Somerset mantles. These are only a few of the curious items.†

Elizabeth Lowle spent her last days in the home of her half-sister, Susan (Taylor) Tappan, and died there April 23, 1651.‡

Elizabeth Lowle, late wife of John Lowle, made her will March 17, 1650, and it was proved September 30, 1651. To her sister Tappine she gave one suit of her wearing linen, that is, one forward cloth, one quoif and one handkerchief. To her three sons-in-law (step-sons), John, James and Joseph Lowel, 10s. apiece. To her son Benjamin, one silver cup and three silver spoons and one-third of the household stuff. To her daughter Elizabeth, the remainder of the household stuff, childbed linen, wearing apparell, a silver tun, a silver tipped jug, three silver spoons, a gold ring, a silver bodkin and two desks. Residue to be divided between her son Benjamin and her daughter Elizabeth. "I will that my brother Thomas Millerd keepe my sonne Beniamine & his estate vntill he goe forth to be an Apprentice & then to be plact forth as my overseers thinke fit; I desire my foure bretherne to be my ouerscers namely bro: Tho: Millerd, Ric^o: Lowle, Abr: Tappine & Will: Gerrish desiring them to see my Daughter Elizabeth to be brought vp to her nedle & what else they Judge meete & to disspose of her as I desire to such as are Godly and meete to instruct my Child in the feare of God." If her son and

* Later the court decided that this was intended to mean the clothes of Elizabeth's grandmother Goodale.

† *Probate Records of Essex County*, I: 67-72.

‡ *Records and Files*, VII: 159.

daughter died before they came of age, their portions were to be divided between her husband's children, John, James & Ben (*sic*), Mary and Peter Lowle. Witnesses: George Emery, Peter Tappan, Will: Gerrish. Mrs. Lowle's silver plate was worth £9: 15: 0, and she had four rings worth 24s., while her riding suit was valued at £2: 15: 0. Most of the items of the inventory were clothing and household linen.*

Apparently the legacies of the two children, Benjamin and Elizabeth Lowle, were turned over to Mr. Milward and upon his death his widow delivered "the whole estate" to the surviving overseers, Gerrish, Lowle and Toppa, who gave her a receipt and discharged her of all demands on December 10, 1654.† In September, 1666, the elders and six inhabitants of the town of Newbury presented a certificate to the court stating that Benjamin and Elizabeth Lowle were of age to receive the portions left them by their father and mother.

Children, the first four born in England:

- i. JOHN; cooper, m. (1) in Boston Jan. 3, 1653, Hannah Proctor; m. (2) Naomi Torrey who was appointed administratrix of his estate Sept. 7, 1694, after his death in Boston Jan. 7, 1693/4.‡
- ii. MARY, b. in 1633. Aged 17, she petitioned the court on Oct. 15, 1650, that her uncle Richard Lowle, her guardian, be directed to pay her £10 of her legacy from her father as she was about to return to England to the friends by whom she had been brought up, presumably her mother's family.§ She m. John Figg who in the Suffolk County Court of July 27, 1675, sued in her behalf the executors and overseers of her father's estate for her portion, losing the case.||
- iii. PETER; mentioned in step-mother's will in 1651.
- iv. JAMES; living in 1651 when he was mentioned in his step-mother's will. The James Lowell who petitioned the Plymouth court for 12 acres of swampy land near his own land on Oct. 29, 1668, was more probably James Lovell of Weymouth and Middleborough.¶

* *Probate Records of Essex County, I: 139.*

† *Records and Files, V: 227.*

‡ In addition to this John Lowle, cooper, of Boston, who married Hannah Proctor, there was a John "Lowell," as he signed his name in 1700, a tanner, who was Lowle's contemporary. This was the man who married Elizabeth Silvester in Scituate on January 24, 1658, the clerk entering his name as "Lowwell." This man, whose history is quite clear, lived successively in Boston, Rehoboth, Lynn and Dunstable where his descendants bore the name of Lovewell. Deceived by the spelling of the tanner's name, the Lowell genealogist incorporated the children of this John "Lowell" or Lovwell and his wife Elizabeth (Silvester) into the family of John Lowle, cooper, of Boston, where they do not belong. (*Founders of Old Dunstable, E. S. Stearns, Boston, 1911.*)

§ That John Lowle's second (not third) wife was Naomi Torrey, daughter of Capt. William Torrey of Weymouth, is adequately proven. In his will of Dec. 9, 1706, Rev. Samuel Torrey mentions Ebenezer Lowle, a son of John and Naomi Lowle, as his kinsman, a not uncommon term for nephew. Rev. Samuel Torrey was a half-brother of Naomi Torrey. For a detailed discussion of the evidence of the Lowle-Torrey marriage, see *The Torrey Families and their Children in America, F. C. Torrey, Lakelhurst, N. J., 1924, pp. 35-36, 341-344.*

¶ *Records of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, III: 213.*

|| *Colonial Society of Massachusetts, 30: 624.*

¶ *Plymouth Colony Records, V: 5.*

- v. JOSEPH, b. in Newbury Nov. 28, 1639; m. in Boston March 8, 1660, Abigail Proctor who d. June 27, 1707, aged 72; d. in Boston Aug. 19, 1705, and is buried in the Old Granary burying-ground. He lived in Boston and was a cooper by trade. On June 15, 1700, he was appointed administrator of the estate of his nephew John Lowle of Bristol, England, mariner (son of his brother John), who d. on board the ship *Amity* of Boston. Of his own estate Joseph Rogers was appointed administrator on Jan. 28, 1708, the property being appraised at £640. Rogers was succeeded by Arthur Jeffrey, merchant, on March 10, 1710, and Jeffrey by John Ballentine, merchant, on April 17, 1712.

By second wife, born in Newbury :

- vi. BENJAMIN, b. Sept. 12, 1642; m., int. Oct. 17, 1666, Ruth Woodman; d. in Newbury Oct. 22, 1714.
Benjamin Lowle caused his uncles much vexation and tiresome litigation over his inheritance from his parents. In June, 1671, he sued Capt. Gerrish and Mr. Richard Lowle, as executors of the estate of Mrs. Elizabeth Lowle, for an accounting and lost the case. He again sued them in 1673 but withdrew the case before trial. In 1674 he sued his uncle Richard over a field that had belonged to his father, and was non-suited. In 1676 he sued Capt. Gerrish again for an accounting, lost the verdict, and appealed to the Court of Assistants where the verdict was sustained. Nothing daunted, he again sued Capt. Gerrish and Mr. Lowle in 1679, and won the case. His poor old uncle Richard, worn out by this performance, had appeared by Tristram Coffin as attorney, and Mr. Coffin took an appeal to the Court of Assistants, where the judgment was reversed on Sept. 2, 1679.*
- vii. THOMAS, b. in Newbury June 4, 1644; d. young.
- viii. ELIZABETH, b. in Newbury Feb. 16, 1646; m. Jan. 1, 1666/7, Capt. Philip Nelson of Rowley; d. Dec. 14, 1731. Nelson made no trouble for the Lowles and gave an acquittance of all demands to Richard Lowle and his wife's other uncles on Feb. 20, 1666/7.

* *Records and Files*, IV: 378; V: 227, 326; VI: 202; VII: 163; *Records of the Court of Assistants of the Massachusetts Bay*, I: 139.

XX

JAQUES, OF NEWBURY

JAQUES

HENRY JAQUES was born in England about the year 1619, his age being estimated as about forty-four in 1663, about fifty-six in 1676, and sixty in 1678. Without documentary evidence, he is said to have come to New England with young Benjamin Woodbridge, who, having entered Oxford at the age of sixteen in 1638, left the university, possibly in 1640, joined his brother John in Newbury in the Massachusetts Bay colony and became the first graduate of Harvard College in 1644. The home of the Woodbridges was Stanton Fitzwarren in north Wiltshire, in which part of the county there also lived a family of Jaques, in the parish of Hullavington, about three miles south of Malmesbury. A Henry Jaques of Hullavington made his will June 2, 1601, mentioning his wife Maude, his sons Robert, Thomas and Peter, his daughter Eleanor and several grandchildren, and it is quite possible that the emigrant Henry Jaques was his descendant.*

Jaques was first at Andover, of which John Woodbridge was a founder, but soon was permanently settled in Newbury where on October 8, 1648, he married Anna Knight. He bought the land of Walter Allen, who had moved to Watertown, before 1651, and probably at the time of his marriage in 1648. He was a housewright, of more than local reputation. Francis Usselton was his apprentice in 1651. In 1660 he was engaged by the town of Ipswich to build "a gallery at both ends and along the west side of the new meeting-house, with three substantial seats all along and three pairs of stairs," for £30, also to lay the meeting-house floor.† He was one of a committee to complete "the ministry house" in Newbury in 1674/5. In 1679 he had built a house in Boston for Henry Ellis, and was obliged to sue for his payment.

In 1665 a group of Newbury men joined to purchase and settle a town in New Jersey to be known as Woodbridge, and Henry Jaques is the second name on the list of the nine original grantees. On the three hundred and sixty-eight acres of land on Rahway creek which he obtained in Woodbridge he settled his oldest son Henry in 1666. The boy, only seventeen, had got into serious trouble in Newbury that year, and had "fled," presumably to Woodbridge with his father, who returned to Newbury in due time.

Jaques was elected constable of Newbury in 1663, selectman in

* *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 52: 68.

† *Records and Files*, IV: 139.

1663/4, 1675/6, 1676/7 and 1678/9 and served on Essex grand juries in 1661, 1676 and 1680. Encouraged by the selectmen, he was prepared to keep an ordinary in 1670. He was an active partisan of Rev. Mr. Parker in the Parker-Woodman controversy in the Newbury church in 1671. He was a tythingman in 1680 and 1687. He took the Freeman's Oath on May 19, 1669, and the Oath of Allegiance in 1678, when he was aged sixty. In King Philip's war he supplied to the forces a horse, worth £3, a bridle, saddle cloth etc., all of which were lost. He was discharged from ordinary training in 1679, and from all training in 1680 because of his lameness and because he had two sons already in the train-band and another about to enter it.

Henry Jaques died in Newbury on February 24, 1686/7, and his widow, Anna Jaques survived until February 22, 1704/5. His will, made October 30, 1686, was proved March 6, 1686/7. To his wife Anna he left one-half of his dwelling-house and half of the great cellar, one-third of the orchard and ten rods of suitable land for a garden. His executor was to keep the garden well fenced, was to cut sufficient wood and bring it to her door and to keep two cows for her both winter and summer. She was also to have the bed in the parlor with all the furniture belonging to it, one-half of the household goods for her life and £6 each year. A horse and a man were to be supplied to carry her to meeting. To his son Daniel Jaques, the land in Bradford and Rowley bought from Capt. Walker, the house and land in Amesbury bought from Richard Currier and John Gimpson, the right in the saw-mill and land bought from Robert Jones and various other lands. To his daughter Mary, wife of Richard Brown, £20. To his daughter Hannah, wife of Ephraim Plummer, 40s. To his daughter Sarah, wife of John Hale, £17. To his daughters Elizabeth and Ruth, £50 apiece two years after marriage or upon reaching the age of twenty-one. His grandson Henry, son of his son Henry, deceased, "shall at the charge of my executor be maintained & kept at schoole untill he can read and write well and cast account sufficiently for common usses & then be bound apprentice to some trade"; also he was to be paid £15 at the age of twenty-one. To the three sons of his son Henry Jaques of Woodbridge, deceased, all his estate at Woodbridge town in East New Jersey, the eldest son to have a double share. To his grandson Richard Jaques, son of his son Richard, deceased, £50 at the age of twenty-one. He appoints his son Stephen his true and lawful heir to all his lands, houses, goods and chattels, with remainders to

Stephen's heirs, his son Daniel, his grandson Richard and his own heir male. "Whereas Jasper my Indian hath been a good servant to me my will is that he shall serve my executor well and faithfully six years after my decease & that then he shall have his freedom." Executor: son Stephen. Overseers: friends Capt. Thomas Noyes, Mr. Moses Gerrish. Witnesses: Isack Ilsley, Anthony Mors, Henry Short. The estate was valued at £1124, Jasper the Indian being worth £10.*

Children, born in Newbury:

- i. HENRY, b. July 30, 1649. In 1666 he had got Eleanor Bryer into trouble and, instead of facing the music, had fled, presumably having been taken to New Jersey by his father. The fine of the unhappy Eleanor was paid by John Knight, and Henry was fined £30 in March and an unnamed sum in May, 1666, for his misdemeanors. He remained in Woodbridge where he married about 1673 Anne, probably sister of John Trueman of Woodbridge who left a legacy to her and her children in his will in 1679. He took the Oath of Allegiance Feb. 27, 1667/8. In 1677 he made public acknowledgment of his error in slandering Rev. Ezekiel Fogg. He died in Woodbridge April 17, 1679. The widow Anne Jaques married Samuel Moore of Woodbridge Dec. 23, 1679, and on March 4, 1679/80, Moore was appointed administrator of the Jaques estate.

Children, born in Woodbridge:

1. *John*, b. Aug. 2, 1674; m. Dec. 11, 1700, Susanna Merrick.
2. *Henry*, b. Sept. 12, 1675. In 1697 and 1697/8 he sold land in Woodbridge and disappears from the records of that town, except that a lot of land was drawn in his name in 1717. The two deeds describe him as a blacksmith. From his grandfather's will it may be inferred that after his father's death this boy, his namesake, was brought up in his grandfather's home in Newbury. Henry Jaques and Rebecca Pickering were published in Ipswich April 10, 1706, and married in Portsmouth June 28, 1706, and in Portsmouth they lived until 1721/2, when administration was granted on his estate to her brother Joshua Pickering. The widow Rebecca Jaques m. at Newington Sept. 24, 1724, Paul Wentworth.
3. *Sarah*, b. Jan. 12, 1677; d. April 12, 1678.
4. *Jonathan*, b. April 8, 1679.
- ii. MARY, b. Nov. 12, 1651; d. Oct. 13, 1653.
- iii. MARY, b. Oct. 23, 1653; m. May 7, 1674, Richard Brown.
- iv. RICHARD; m. Jan. 18, 1681, Ruth Plummer. He took the Oath of Allegiance in 1676, aged 22. He was drowned May 28, 1683 (town record), but in the inventory of his estate it says that he died June 22, 1683. The first date is correct as on that day a jury of inquest found that Richard Jakwish, tired and weary with washing sheep, jumped into the river to save a man who was beyond his depth, "sank and rose no more." † He left a small estate.‡

* Essex Probate, No. 14767.

† Quarterly Court of Essex County.

‡ Essex Probate, 304: 35.

Children, born in Newbury:

1. *Richard*, b. Dec. 5, 1682; d. Feb. 2, 1682/3.
2. *Richard*, "son of Richard deceased," b. Jan. 6, 1684; m. Feb. 25, 1714/5, Elizabeth Knight; both of them d. of small-pox in March, 1760.

v. *HANNAH*; m. Jan. 15, 1679, Ephraim Plummer.

- vi. *STEPHEN*, b. Sept. 9, 1661; m. May 13, 1684, Deborah Plummer. He took the Oath of Allegiance in 1676, aged 17, and the Freeman's Oath May 30, 1690. Like his father he was a successful housewright in Newbury. On Dec. 12, 1698, Sergt. Stephen Jaques, having been on the committee to plan the new meeting-house, contracted to build it for the sum of £530. It was to be 60 feet by 50 feet and 24 feet stud, and Jaques completed it in 1700. In 1703 Ensign Stephen Jaques, Mr. Benjamin Woodbridge and Henry Jaques (his nephew) were setting up a windmill. He was a lieutenant in the military company in 1718/9. His account book, containing local information, is preserved in the Essex Institute.

The will of Stephen Jaques of Newbury, made Aug. 13, 1743, was proved Oct. 29, 1744. He left his homestead to John and Samuel Jaques, sons of his son Samuel. To his son Stephen. To his cousin (nephew) Richard Jaques. To his son Richard Jaques, 200 acres at Coxhall. To his son Benjamin. To his grandson Eliphalet Jaques. To his four daughters, Mary, Sarah, Anne and Elizabeth. To his grandson Parker Jaques, his right in the plantation of Contoocook. To Sarah and Eleanor Jaques, daughters of his son Stephen, £100 each. To his daughter Sarah, £56. To his daughter Anne, £57. To his daughter Elizabeth, £12: 4: 0. To his granddaughter Ruth Mooers, £3. To his granddaughter Elizabeth Atkinson, £3. To his granddaughter Mary Noyes, £8. To his daughter Elizabeth, £9. To his son Henry Jaques's widow, £5. To his grandson Parker Jaques, £20. To his granddaughter Mary Pierce, £10. To his granddaughters Love Jaques and Florence Jaques, £10 each. To his grandson Samuel Jaques, son of his son Samuel, £5 and £8 more to be paid by his kinsman Richard Jaques after receiving his above legacy. To his daughter-in-law Lydia Pearson, £5 to be paid by her sons John and Samuel Jaques. To his daughter Thankful Jaques, while she remains his son Stephen's widow, a room in his house and the use of part of the cellar, the orchard and the garden.* To his son Stephen, his Indian man Will. Executors: son Stephen and grandson John Jaques, to whom all the personal estate. Witnesses: John Pike, Joseph Hsley, Tristram Little.†

Children, born in Newbury:

1. *Stephen*, b. Feb. 5, d. March 12, 1684/5.
2. *Stephen*, b. July 28, 1686. Harvard College, A.B., 1707. In 1711 the town of Yarmouth engaged "Mr. Jaquesh" to keep an English school and a grammar school to teach Latin. He received £24 a year and 5s. a week for board. He married Thankful Taylor in Yarmouth Feb. 21, 1712/3, and returned to Newbury, where he was a farmer, deacon and notary. His will was proved Nov. 3, 1778, and his estate was worth £813.
3. *Henry*, b. 1689; m. Jan. 24, 1711/2, Mary Coffin who d. Nov. 7, 1760; d. July 20, 1723, in his 35th year.

* This was a very anticipatory provision, as Stephen was still alive.

† Essex Probate, 326: 129.

4. *Samuel*, b. March 19, 1691/2; m. Dec. 12, 1717, Lydia Pike, who m., secondly, before 1743, ——— Pearson.
 5. *Mary*, b. Sept. 26, 1694; m. Nov. 24, 1715, Parker Greenleaf.
 6. *Sarah*, b. Sept. 23, 1697; m. Feb 12, 1716/7, Moses Little, jr.
 7. *Richard*, b. April 1, 1700. Harvard College, 1720. He married Feb. 19, 1722/3, Judith Noyes. Ordained pastor of the second church of Gloucester in 1725, he died there in poverty after a long illness, April 10, 1777.
 8. *Benjamin*, b. Sept. 23, 1702; m. (1) May 20, 1725, Apphia Coffin who d. Aug. 31, 1726; m. (2) Dec. 5, 1727, Mary Noyes; d. Sept. 13, 1782.
 9. *Anne*, b. Feb. 25, 1705; m. Oct. 29, 1725, Robert Adams, jr.
 10. *Elizabeth*.
- vii. *SARAH*, b. March 20, 1663; m. Oct. 10, 1683, John Hale. (*See Hale*.)
- viii. *DANIEL*, b. Feb. 20, 1666/7; m. (1) March 20, 1692/3, Mary Williams; m. (2) Susanna ———, who d. in Bradford Sept. 22, 1725, in her 56th year.

Child, by first wife :

1. *Daniel*, b. in Newbury Dec. 27, 1693; m. in Bradford Nov. 8, 1722, Hannah Carlton; d. in Bradford Nov. 6, 1775.

By second wife :

2. *Richard*, b. in Newbury Feb. 2, 1695/6. He settled in York, Maine, where he married May 10, 1724, Mary Harmon, daughter of Lieut.-Col. Johnson Harmon. Successively sergeant and ensign in the York military company, he was lieutenant under his father-in-law in the second attack on Norridgewock in 1724, when he shot the militant Jesuit, Sebastien Râsle, in spite of orders that the priest was to be taken alive, his excuse being that Râsle was firing upon the English from his hut and had refused to give or receive quarter. By 1727 he had settled on Merriconeag neck at the end of Casco Bay. He also owned Jaquish island, south of Bailey's island, and bought 100 acres on Little Sebascodegan, now Bailey's island, in 1743. He was one of Sir William Pepperell's captains at Louisburg, having been commissioned on February 9, 1744, and is said to have been killed in a late Indian foray in 1749. His widow, Mary Jaques, m. Nov. 8, 1750, John Littlefield.
 3. *John*, b. in Bradford Aug. 13, 1698; m. Nov. 21, 1723 Sarah Hazeltine.
 4. *Abigail*, b. in Bradford Jan. 16, 1703; m. Oct. 23, 1718, Benjamin Allen of Suffield.
 5. *Susanna*, b. in Bradford March 19, 1704/5.
 6. *Ruth*, b. in Bradford April 2, 1709; m. Sept. 7, 1727, Ezekiel Wilson.
 7. *Moses*, b. in Bradford May 4, 1711.
 8. *Hannah*, b. in Bradford May 1, 1716/7.
- ix. *ELIZABETH*, b. Oct. 28, 1669; m. Richard Knight.
- x. *RUTH*, b. April 14, 1672; m. Nov. 29, 1692, Stephen Emery.
- xi. *ABIGAIL*, b. March 11, 1673/4; that she was not mentioned in the will of her father in 1686 makes her suggested marriage to Benjamin Knight, with no date given, very questionable.

XXI

KNIGHT, OF NEWBURY

KNIGHT

1. WILLIAM KNIGHT of Romsey, co. Hants, England, was probably born about 1565. He married at Romsey, on November 12, 1588, Elizabeth Carter. As they named a daughter Thomasine, it would seem that Elizabeth Carter was a daughter of William and Thomasine Carter who had a daughter Thomasine baptized at Romsey in 1571. She was supposedly the Thomasine Carter who married Thomas Emery in 1597. (*See Emery.*)

Romsey is a small market town seven miles north-west of Southampton in the valley of the river Test. It is principally known for its great Norman church of the twelfth century, originally the chapel of a Benedictine nunnery. From mediaeval times Romsey was the seat of a large trade in woolen cloth and clothing, which is interesting in view of the fact that the Knight brothers, sons of William and Elizabeth, were both tailors.*

The parish registers of Romsey begin in 1569/70, when the name Knight was already common in the town. About three miles to the north, in the parish of Timsbury, was seated an armorial family of Knight, minor gentry who had originally come from Northamptonshire and some of whom lived in Romsey. The Timsbury gentleman who was contemporary with William Knight of Romsey was Andrew Knight whose father had been named Richard Knight. Richard Knight had a brother William, while Andrew Knight had brothers John, William and Richard. After her husband died, Joan, widow of Andrew Knight, lived in Romsey as did her younger son Edmond and her daughter Ursula (Knight) Mundy who was married there in 1621. It is possible that other of the Knights in Romsey were descended from younger sons of the Timsbury family, but this remains to be proven.

Another William Knight of Romsey married Joan Hill on September 1, 1588, only two months before the Knight-Carter marriage, but fortunately he left a will† at his death in 1622 in which he mentions his wife Joan and an only child, William, which clears away any doubt as to which marriage produced the emigrant brothers John and Richard Knight.

Children, baptized in Romsey:

- i. RICHARD, bapt. May 30, 1589; buried June 4, 1596.
- ii. THOMASINE, bapt. June 24, 1590.
2. iii. JOHN, bapt. Jan. 30, 1595/6.
3. iv. RICHARD, bapt. Jan. 14, 1603.‡

* The country house of Lord Palmerston, the Victorian Prime Minister, was in this parish.

† Archdeaconry of Winchester.

‡ This record was seen by William Sumner Appleton, a careful antiquary, when he

2. JOHN² KNIGHT (*William*¹) was baptized in Romsey, county Hants, January 30, 1595. He married Elizabeth — before 1625. With his brother Richard and several other Romsey men and their families, he embarked on the *James* at Southampton in April, 1635, for New England where he and his brother settled in the town of Newbury. This group emigration was under the influence of Rev. Joseph Avery who was vicar of Romsey from 1626 to 1634 when he sailed for New England.* Mr. Avery was drowned on a shorter voyage, from Newbury to Marblehead, in 1635, and Whittier kept his memory green in his "Swan Song of Parson Avery."

Knight was made a freeman of Massachusetts Bay on May 25, 1636. Although a tailor by trade he was licensed to keep an ordinary in Newbury by the General Court on June 1, 1637. He served on trial juries in 1650, 1652, 1658, 1663, 1666 and 1667, and he, or his son John, was clerk of the Newbury market in 1655 and selectman in 1668 and 1669.

William Neff, Knight's apprentice boy, had the misfortune of being twice beaten by Newbury neighbors, once by Joseph Muzzey in 1658, and the second time by Matthew Moore the Scot in 1659.† In 1666, Knight sued John Wolcott for a debt of £12 and won a verdict. He was seated in the new short seat on the east side of the meeting-house with other elderly men in 1669.

Elizabeth, wife of John Knight, died in Newbury on March 20, 1644/5. His second wife was a Salem widow, Ann Ingersoll. He died in May or June, 1670, and she survived him.

John Knight made his will May 5 and it was proved June 23, 1670. To his wife Anne he left £11 a year and the use of half of his house. To his daughter Sarah Bartlett, wife of John Bartlett, £40, and if she left no heirs it was to go to the children of his son John Knight, excepting Joseph Knight. To his daughter Mary Downer, wife of Joseph Downer, £80, and to his grandchildren Joseph and Mary Downer, £20 each. To Mary Downer, land on the south side of John Pike's land and also near the creek by Henry Jaques's land, also the lot at Plum island and the two acres where they have built, also land near his son John's two

examined the register some time before 1893 when he printed it in a little book on his maternal ancestry called *Early Wills of Coffin*. When the register was examined for me in 1937 this entry was not found, but the searcher noted that the register for the years 1602 and 1603 was "mixed," the entries probably placed in any margin or inadequate space. It is safe to trust to Mr. Appleton's reading. Later: This baptism was verified for me by Sir Richard Luce of Romsey in 1942.

* That Rev. Joseph Avery was vicar of Romsey, 1626-1634, was told me by Sir Richard Luce, K.C.M.G., C.B., F.R.C.S., F.S.A., of Romsey, in a letter of March, 1945.

† *Records and Files*, II: 117, 154.

acres on the way to New Town that he bought of Nicholas Noyes, a great kettle, a pewter candlestick and a platter. To his wife's grandchild Thomas Haines, £10 when his time was out. To his son John, the homestead the testator then lived in and the lands near John Pike's and Henry Jaques' until John's son Joseph came of age, when Joseph was to enjoy it. Executor: son John. Overseers: his brother Richard Knight, Thomas Hale, sr., Nicholas Noyse. Witnesses: Richard Knight, Thomas Hale. The inventory showed property worth £324.*

Children:

- i. ELIZABETH, bapt. in Romsey May 16, 1625; d. young.
- ii. JOHN, bapt. in Romsey May 14, 1626. He came to New England with his parents and lived in Newbury, where he was the town's constable in 1654, sergeant of the military company in 1666 and its ensign in 1669. He was "about 45" in 1669. He married Bathsua Ingersoll of Salem, who d., his widow, Oct. 24, 1705. He died in Newbury February 7, 1677. Of their eight children who lived to marry, five married into the Noyes family.

Children, born in Newbury:

1. *John*, b. Aug. 16, 1648; m. Jan. 1, 1671, Rebecca Noyes.
2. *Joseph*, b. June 21, 1652; m. Oct. 31, 1677, Deborah Coffin.
3. *Elizabeth*, b. Oct. 18, 1655; m. Feb. 25, 1673, Cutting Noyes.
4. *Mary*, b. Sept. 8, 1657; m. Jan. 13, 1680, Timothy Noyes.
5. *Sarah* (twin), b. April 13, 1660; m. Nov. 16, 1686, Thomas Noyes.
6. *A child* (twin), b. April 13, 1660; d. April 27, 1660.
7. *Hannah*, b. March 22, 1661/2; d. July 30, 1664.
8. *Hannah*, b. Aug. 30, 1664; m. March 31, 1684, James Noyes.
9. *Richard*, b. July 26, 1666; m. Elizabeth Jaques.
10. *Benjamin*, b. Aug. 21, 1668.
11. *Isaac*, b. Aug. 30, 1672; d. July 29, 1690.
- iii. ELIZABETH, bapt. in Romsey Oct. 13, 1628; buried Oct. 19, 1628.
- iv. ELIZABETH, bapt. in Romsey March 18, 1632; no further record.
- v. MARY, bapt. in Romsey Aug. 10, 1634; m. in Newbury July 9, 1660, Joseph Downer.
- vi. SARAH; m. in Newbury March 6, 1659/60, John Bartlett.

3. RICHARD² KNIGHT (*William*¹) was baptized in Romsey, co. Hants, on January 14, 1603. He is said to have married Agnes Coffley of Romsey, where a Coffley family was living in the seventeenth century.† Like his elder brother John he was a tailor.

In April, 1635, with his brother John and their families, Richard Knight embarked at Southampton on the *James* of London, 300 tons, William Cooper master, for the voyage to New England. Only "men, youthes, and boyes," fifty-three in number, ap-

* *Probate Records of Essex County*, II: 190.

A ms. genealogy of this Knight family, by the late Charles S. Tibbetts, is in the library of the Maine Historical Society.

† This is apparently a traditional statement, made to Joshua Coffin when he was collecting material for his *History of Newbury*, published in 1845.

pear on the passenger list, but with them were "the wives and children of Dyvers of these."

The Knights settled at once in Newbury and there Richard Knight lived out his long life, quietly and inconspicuously. He was made a freeman of Massachusetts Bay on May 25, 1636, and that year he was elected one of the selectmen of Newbury, serving in that office again in 1662. Much of his service to the town was in laying out lots, roads and grants, from 1638, when he first became lot-layer, until as late as 1675 when he was still acting in that capacity. His only jury service was in 1647 when he was on a trial jury, but that year he was appointed by the General Court to be a commissioner to end small causes, a local justice. He was engaged in dividing common lands in 1651 and in the division of Plum island in 1656. He was a deacon of the church for many years. His education had been such as to enable him to make copies of town records for court purposes.

Agnes, Annis and Anne being interchangeable names in the seventeenth century, Agnes Knight may be the "cousin Ann Knight of Newbery" mentioned with her children, unnamed, in the will of John Spencer of Newbury, August 1, 1637.* There was another Richard Knight of Hampton, however, with an unknown first wife, and there is plenty of evidence of a flow of population between Hampton and Newbury in the early years of that century. Spencer is said to have come from Kingston-on-Thames, co. Surrey.

In 1651 laws prohibiting extravagance in dress were passed in the colony, and in 1653 the wife of Deacon Knight was summoned to court for wearing a silk hood. This troubled him exceedingly, and in his behalf his friend Mr. Edward Rawson wrote to one of the justices at Salem the following note:

Honorable Sir,

An honest godly man, a friend of mine in Newbury, whose name is Richard Knight, whether of ignorance or wilfulness by some neighbour is presented for his wife's wearing of a silk hood, supposing he has not been worth two hundred pounds. It being a grievance to him, who is advanced (in years) to be summoned to a court, that never useth to trouble any, at his request I thought fit to inform you on my owne knowledge his estate is better worth than three hundred, and therefore I desire you would, as you may, forbear, in your warrant to insert his name in it, it may be; if not, at least that you would take private satisfaction of him in your chamber, which he can easily give you, or any, in a moment. Not else at present but my service to you and Mr. Symon Bradstreet.

Yours friend and servant,

Edward Rawson

Now at Newbury, the fourteenth of August, 1653.†

* *Probate Records of Essex County*, I: 107.

† *History of Newbury*, Joshua Coffin, p. 58.

Proof being made of Knight's financial worth, his wife was discharged.

There are numerous evidences of his age. He was about 69 in 1671, about 70 in 1673, about 73 in 1675, about 75 in 1677, and 77 in 1678 when he took the Oath of Allegiance.

It is amusing to find the deacon before the magistrates at least once on his own account. In 1663 he and his friend Hugh March sat down for a game of cards at Knight's home. This was an offense against Massachusetts morality, and, informed upon, the two were presented at the quarterly court, one of the two witnesses against them being Bathsua, wife of his nephew John Knight.* In the Parker-Woodman dispute he was, as might be expected, on the minister's side, and, on going to Mr. Woodman to demand the church book, he was told by Woodman that he "did very sinfully in holding with Mr. Parker."†

In King Philip's war he supplied a dragoon horse for thirteen weeks (£19: 6: 2), bridles (6: 6), a horse to Dedham, Ipswich and Salisbury (£1: 11: 0), a gun (£1: 6: 8) and two horses (£4: 17: 8).

Richard Knight died in Newbury August 4, 1683. His wife Agnes had died there March 22, 1678/9.

Richard Knight made his will August 17, 1681. It was proved September 25, 1683, and an inventory of £759 entered. To his grandchildren Anthony Mosse and Joseph Mosse he left £10 apiece, and to Elizabeth Mosse, £20. To his daughter Rebecca Somerby, in addition to the meadow and cattle he had given her when she married Abiel Somerby, £60 that he had then promised. To his son-in-law Henry Jaques and Ann, his wife, £5 to be paid within four years of his decease, or before if his executors could well do it. To his daughter Sarah Keley and her husband John Keley, his executors, all his housing and land, both upland and meadow, commonage and privileges belonging to the land, all his stock of cattle, horses, kine, sheep, and swine and all his goods, during their lives. To his grandchild John Keley, after his parents' death, the lot in the old town, joining unto Joseph Elsley's upland and the common, five acres of marsh meadow, five acres of marshland at Plum island, joining unto the land he had given to his daughter Rebecca Somerby. If John should die leaving no surviving child, these lands should go to his brother Jonathan Keley, he paying his sister Rebecca Keley £10. If John should live to enjoy the lands, he should pay his brother Jonathan £10.

* *Records and Files*, III: 70.

† *Records and Files*, IV: 356.

To his grandchild Richard Keley, his house, housing, barns, orchard and all the rest of his land, Richard to pay to his brother Abiel Keley £20. If Richard should die leaving no surviving child, all the houses, barns, orchard and lands before mentioned should go to Abiel Keley, he to pay his sister Sarah Keley £20. Overseers: loving friends Mr. Nicholas Noyes, Robert Long, who were also witnesses.

Children:

- i. A STILL-BORN child, buried at Romsey June 17, 1626.
- ii. RICHARD, bapt. June 21 and buried July 15, 1627, at Romsey.
- iii. WILLIAM, bapt. Dec. 7, 1628, at Romsey, and possibly the William Knight buried there Jan. 10, 1630.
- iv. ANNE, bapt. May 5, 1631, at Romsey; m. in Newbury Oct. 8, 1648, Henry Jaques. (*See Jaques.*)
- v. RICHARD, bapt. Oct. 18, 1633, at Romsey; d. young.
- vi. ELIZABETH; m. May 8, 1660, Anthony Morse.
- vii. REBECCA, b. in Newbury March 3, 1642; m. Nov. 13, 1661, Abiel Somerby.
- viii. SARAH, b. in Newbury Feb. 23, 1648; m. John Kelley.

XXII

SILVER, OF NEWBURY

SILVER

1. THOMAS SILVER of Newbury, whose age was estimated as "about fifty" when he gave testimony in 1674,* and as fifty-six when he took the Oath of Allegiance in 1678, would therefore seem to have been born about 1622, presumably in England. If this was the case he was only fifteen in 1637 when Ipswich granted six acres of land to a Thomas Silver who is presumed to be the man later at Newbury. He had settled in the latter town by March 12, 1641/2, when he had a share in the ox and cow common, and he was listed as a freeholder in 1642. In 1650 the town granted him an acre of marsh next to marsh which he had bought from Henry Jaques in exchange for permission to establish a cart-way over land, formerly Samuel Scullard's, which Silver then owned on the Parker river. This lane is still in use. In 1666 he signed a petition urging conciliation between the English government and the General Court of Massachusetts Bay.

Silver had a first wife whose name does not appear on the records and who died after bearing him two daughters. On August 16, 1649, he married in Newbury Katherine — whose surname is illegible.† Two years later one Elizabeth Randall was haled before the magistrates for calling Goody Silver "base lying divell, base lying tode, base lying sow, base lying jade." Obviously annoyed, Elizabeth exhibited an artistic choice of abusive nouns, but her supply of adjectives seems strangely limited.‡ Both the Silvers testified against Mary Rolfe "for keeping company at unseasonable hours of the night at her house to the disturbance of the neighbors" in 1663.§ Katherine Silver died in Newbury July 23, 1665, four days after giving birth to a daughter who survived the mother only a week.

In 1675 Silver was described as "an idle person and one who spends his time unprofitably, not being willing to work."|| He died in Newbury September 6, 1682.

His sons-in-law Francis Willett and Henry Acres asked the court that Silver's estate might be divided and, Thomas Silver the eldest son renouncing his right, they were appointed administrators September 26, 1682. The small estate of £104 was divided into eight shares, two going to the eldest son Thomas Silver and one to each of the other children, John Silver, Samuel Silver,

* *Records and Files*, V: 330.

† Possibly it began with the letter C.

‡ *Records and Files*, I: 251.

§ *Records and Files*, III: 66.

|| *Records and Files*, VI: 26.

Mary Robeson, Martha Willett, Hannah Acres and Sarah Alley.* The administrators sold part of the Newbury land to Tristram Coffin on October 26, 1682.†

Children, by first wife:

- i. MARY; m. in Newbury Oct. 26, 1664, Robert Robinson.
- ii. SARAH; m. in Newbury Feb. 9, 1670, Thomas Alley of Rowley. That part of the estate of Thomas Silver of Newbury which was allotted to Sary Alley, daughter of Thomas Alley by the daughter of Thomas Silver, was to be put in the hands of Mr. Tristram Coffin, her guardian, "Thos. Alley not being accounted so responsible as may be desired," April 10, 1683.‡

By second wife, born in Newbury:

- iii. ELIZABETH (twin), b. March 14, 1650; d. before 1682, *s.p.*
- iv. MARTHA (twin), b. March 14, 1650; m. Dec. 20, 1669, Francis Willett.
- v. THOMAS, b. March 26, 1653; d. March 3, 1655.
- vi. HANNAH, b. Oct. 18, 1655; m. March 13, 1673/4, Henry Acres.
- vii. THOMAS, b. March 26, 1658; m. Dec. 28, 1681 (Haverhill record), or Jan. 4, 1681/2 (Newbury record), Mary Williams. He was a soldier in King Philip's war, and £1: 10: 10 was due him for his service on Nov. 24, 1676. He took the Oath of Allegiance in Newbury in 1678, aged twenty. After his marriage he lived in Haverhill where he died Aug. 26, 1695. Administration on his estate was granted to his widow Sept. 25, 1696. The inventory, listing a Bible and other books, came to £105.§

Widow Mary Silver m. Capt. Simon Wainwright in Haverhill Aug. 7, 1700. When the French and Indians made an attack on Haverhill in force early in the morning of Sunday, August 30, 1708, the Silver house, which stood ten rods from the meeting-house, was rifled and burned. Capt. Wainwright was killed by one of the first shots fired when his house was attacked, and when the Indians were beating at the door Mrs. Wainwright removed the bars and let them in, spoke kindly to the astonished savages and gave them whatever they asked. When they demanded money she "went to get it" and made good the opportunity to escape with some of her family. Her daughter Mary Silver, a girl of fourteen, was taken prisoner.||

Children:

1. Sarah, b. in Newbury Oct. 2, 1682; m. Benjamin Emerson before Dec. 7, 1708/9 (*sic.*), when they gave a receipt for a share in her father's estate to her mother, Mrs. Mary Wainwright.¶
2. Mary, b. Feb. 3, 1685; d. April 25, 1686.
3. John, b. Feb. 24, 1687/8; m. before 1712 Sarah (Keyser) Moulton. He and other young men in 1709 had permission to build a seat in the west gallery of the meeting-house if they did not "damnify the light from them windows."

* Essex Probate, No. 25339.

† Essex Deeds, 25: 109.

‡ Quarterly Court of Essex County.

§ Essex Probate, 305: 80.

|| *History of Haverhill*, George Wingate Chase, 1861.

¶ Essex Probate, 310: 325.

4. *Thomas*, b. Feb. 21, 1690/1; m. before 1713 Mary Pecker; a cooper in Haverhill.
 5. *Mary*, b. Feb. 26, 1693/4. Captured in the attack on Haverhill in 1708 when she was fourteen, Mary "daughter of the principal inhabitant" (Capt. Wainwright) received unusual care on the long hard march to Canada, being carried part of the way by a young Monsieur Dupuy of Quebec. Soon she was living as a pupil with the Sisters of the Congregation of Notre Dame at Villemarie, and on Feb. 2, 1710, she was baptized in the Catholic faith, her godfather being "the High and Mighty Seigneur Messire Philippe de Rigaud, Marquis de Vaudreuil . . . Governor General of New France" and her godmother "Dame Charlotte Denis, wife of Messire Claude de Ramezay . . . Governor of the Island of Montreal and its dependencies." Later she was confirmed as Adelaide Silver and naturalized. Her mother made every effort to secure her release, and, after peace was declared, to persuade her to return voluntarily, but the hold of her new faith was too strong. She became a Hospital Nun of St. Joseph and lived and died (Aug. 2, 1740) in the Hôtel Dieu in Montreal.*
- viii. JOHN, b. Aug. 24, 1660. John Silver of Rowley "Beeing called foarth to go to Cannaday" as a soldier, made his will June 28, 1690, and it was proved April 22, 1691. To his brother Thomas Silver he left £7: 10: 0 in Samuel Pearse's hands. To his brother Samuel Silver, a cow in his master Bailey's hands and that which was due him from Ezekiel Mighill. To his sisters Willett and Acars, £1 apiece in his master John Bailey's hands. Residue to Jonathan Bayley of Rowley if he lived to be twenty-one, if not, to Nathaniel Bayley. Witnesses: Thomas Leaver, James Bayley. Administrators: Thomas and Samuel Silver.†
2. ix. SAMUEL, b. Feb. 16, 1661/2.
 - x. A DAUGHTER, b. July 19, d. July 30, 1665.

2. SAMUEL² SILVER (*Thomas*¹) was born in Newbury February 16, 1661/2. He married first Mary — who died in Rowley January 4, 1700/1. His second wife was Sarah Colby whom he married July 8, 1701.

Silver moved from Newbury to Rowley before 1692 and his wife Mary joined the church of the latter town Oct. 15, 1693. In 1708 he was a "snow-shoe man" at Amesbury in the defense of that frontier settlement against French and Indian attack. He had moved his family there by 1705/6 when his son Samuel was born, although his second wife, Sarah Silver, was not dismissed from Rowley church to Amesbury church until 1714. She was again transferred to Amesbury West Parish in 1725 in which year Samuel was the "collector" of that organization, although he was not actually received into membership until November 27, 1727, unless this was his son Samuel, joining the church just two weeks after his first marriage.

* *New England Captives Carried to Canada*, Coleman, I: 354-8.

† Essex Probate, No. 25331.

Children by first wife, born in Rowley :

- i. MARY, b. June 5, 1692; m. March 16, 1715, Richard Hale (*See Hale.*)
- ii. ELIZABETH, b. April 1, 1694.
- iii. MERCY, bapt. March 15, 1695/6; d. March 30, 1696.
- iv. RUTH, b. March 4, 1697/8; prob. m. in Amesbury March 20, 1717/8, Samuel Martin, although the bride's name has been read "Oliver" as well as Silver.
- v. A CHILD; d. July 20, 1699.
- vi. SAMUEL, bapt. Aug. 18, 1700; d. young.

By second wife :

- vii. SARAH, b. May 20, 1702; m. May 5, 1726, Nathaniel Davis.
- viii. SAMUEL, b. in Amesbury Jan. 20, 1705/6; m. (1) Nov. 9, 1727, Martha Sargent; m. (2) Feb. 14, 1733/4, Jemima Kimball. In 1738 he and his sister Mehitable Currier released all rights in the estate of their grandfather Isaac Colby to their sister Sarah Davis and her husband.*

Children, by first wife, baptized in Amesbury :

1. JOHN, bapt. Sept. 8, 1728.
2. SAMUEL, bapt. Aug. 16, 1730.

By second wife :

3. MARTHA, bapt. Jan. 26, 1734/5.
4. RUTH, bapt. Aug. 28, 1737.
5. SARAH, bapt. June 1, 1740.
6. EUNICE, bapt. Jan. 5, 1743; m. Sept. 14, 1769, Samuel Hale.
7. TIMOTHY, bapt. Aug. 3, 1746.
8. JOHN, bapt. Feb. 4, 1749/50.
- ix. MEHITABLE, b. July 12, 1711; m. March 31, 1732/3, Nathan Currier.†

* Essex Deeds. 81: 43.

† Not placed: Mary Silver and William Skinner, int. Jan. 31, 1718, at Ipswich. John Silver m. Elizabeth Coker at South Hampton, N. H., Dec. 14, 1755.

INDEX

INDEX

- | A | B | C |
|---|--|---|
| ABBOTT Arthur 107 133
Joseph 41
Sarah 106 | BABEL Susanna 102 | BOARDMAN Jonathan 158
Sarah 133 |
| ACRES Hannah 244
Henry 243 244 | BACKHOUSE Francis 21 | BOLLS Joseph 103 |
| ADAMS John 154
Phebe 135 | BACON Samuel 105 | BOOKER William 37 |
| ADDINGTON Isaac 55 | BAGLEY Theophilus 26 | BORCHAM John 76 |
| ALABASTER Bridget 74
John 74 | BAILEY Charles 166 167
Eleanor 180 181
Isaac 181 199
James 179 181 245
John 179-181 189 245
Jonathan 245
Joseph 179 181 188
Joshua 150 181
Judith 181
Lewis 72
Nathaniel 245
Rachel 181
Rebecca 181
Robert 179 180
Sarah 149 181
Thomas 213 | BORMAN Martha 174
BORNE Judith 75
BOROUGH John 214
BOSWORTH Abigail 119
Haniel 112 119
BOULTON Jane 219
BOWMAN George E. 97 98
Henry 12
Mary 12 |
| ALINGTON Sir Giles 74 | BAKER Elizabeth 103
John 55 101 103 105
Mary 155
Sarah 24
William 24 | BOWND John 88
BOYD Percival 153 |
| ALLEN Benjamin 231
Edward 113
John 71 197
Joseph 162
Mary 17
Samuel 105
Sarah 72 | BALLENTINE John 224 | BRACKENBURY William 134 |
| ALLEY Sarah 244
Thomas 244 | BANKS Charles E. 18 | BRADBURY Mary 204
Thomas 179 |
| ALPORT Joseph 204 | BARBER Rose 69
Thomas 70 | BRADSTREET Humphrey 143
Mary 113
Simon 238 |
| AMES John 157 | BARCLAY Josephine 41 | BRAGG Edward 51 |
| ANDERSON J. 215 | BARKER Christopher 173 | BRASIER Rebecca 12 |
| ANDREWS David A. 42
Elizabeth 144
John 51 81 132 143 144 | BARNARD Margaret 212 | BREWER John 124 |
| ANNABLE Hannah 106
John 29
Susanna 125 | BARRETT John 37
Mary 166 | BREWSTER William 98 |
| APPLETON Adam 61
Agnes 61
Anne 65 66 68 74
Beatrice 74
Bridget 74
Dorothy 73 74
Edward 66-68 70 71
Elizabeth 67
Frances 70 73 74
Gilbert 65 67
Isaac 69 71-74 76
John 29 36 53 55 61-63
67 72-77 103 138
Judith 71 72 77
Margaret 62 63
Martha 51 74 77
Mary 66 68 69 71-74 77
Nicholas 61
Peter 61
Ralph 61
Richard 65-68
Robert 61 62 65 66 68 74
Rose 68 69
Samuel 53 54 57 72 75-77
218
Sarah 74 77
Thomas 62-65 67-71 75
William 65-68 70 71
William S. 64 235 | BARTHOLOMEW Andrew 117 | BRICKET Elizabeth 189 |
| ARUNDEL Lady 64 65 | BARTLETT John 236 237
Mary 57
Rebecca 181
Sarah 236 | BRIDGES Edmund 119
John 103 |
| ASHFIELD Robert 67 | BARWICK William 76 | BRIDGHAM Col. 98 |
| ASHTON Joseph 99 | BATCHELDER Deborah 28
Joseph 31
Sarah 31 | BRIDGMAN Dr. 103 |
| ATKINSON Elizabeth 230
Humphrey 200
Sarah 199 | BATHERNE George 217 | BRIER Huldah 38 |
| AULD Sarah A. 41 | BATMAN Anne 117 | BRIGHAM Anna 167 |
| AVERILL William 22 51 | BAUGH Richard 221 | BROOKS Susanna 158 |
| AVERY Joseph 186 236 | BAXTER George 11 | BROUGH Ann 153 |
| AWEY James 8 | BEANE Dionis 193
Henry 193 | BROWN Abigail 31
Benjamin 83
Ebenezer 155
Edward 204
Elizabeth 83 98 156
Hannah 82 83
Henry 68
Isaac 181
Jacob 32 83
James 82 83
Joan 153
John 81-83 156 199
Joseph 41
Judith 83
Lucy 36
Martha 83
Mary 24 56 82 83 104
Nathan 83
Nathaniel 81-83
Priscilla H. 40
Rebecca 181
Richard 199 228 229
Ruth 203 204
Samuel 56 76
Sarah 82 83
Thomas 56
Tristram 23 26
William 82 83 |
| AYERS Elizabeth 159
Hannah 101
John 102 133
Joseph 101 | BENNETT Mary A. 41
John 88 89 | BRUMLEY Preserved 158 |

- Mary 166
 Rachel 32
 Sarah 83
 Thomas 81
 William 32
 BORRAGE Elizabeth 150
 BUSELL Corporal 24
 BUTLER John 218
 Laurence 73
 William 131 132 138
 BUTTOLPH Priscilla 55
 BUTTON Matthias 158
 C
 CAGE Anthony 73
 Daniel 76
 Joan 208
 Sir John 73
 Mary 73
 CALDWELL Anne 125
 Benjamin 159 166
 Dillingham 125
 Lydia 164
 Mary 159
 Nathan 164
 Sarah 125
 CALEF Mary 105
 CALLENDER Mary H. 42
 CARLTON Hannah 231
 CARRS Abigail 32
 CARR Mary 181
 William 100
 CARTER Elizabeth 235
 Eunice 204
 Joseph 195 203 204
 Rachel 204
 Sarah 204
 SUSAN 203
 Thomasine 185 235
 William 235
 CATESBY Elizabeth 211
 Sir William 211
 CAULKINS Francis 156
 CECIL Lady Dorothy 74
 CHADWELL Moses 137
 Thomas 8
 CHALLIS Philip 179
 CHAMPNIES Sarah 168
 CHANDLER Mary 220
 CHAPMAN Daniel 106
 Elizabeth 45
 George 194
 John 25
 Mary 176
 CHASE Anne 81
 Elizabeth 28
 ISAAC 17 18 23-26
 Mary 162
 CHAUNCEY Charles 10
 CHEAPE Elizabeth 72
 CHEEVERS Thomas 120
 CHENEY Daniel 147-150 181
 Eleanor 149 150 158
 Elizabeth 136 137 148 149
 Hannah 149
 James 149 150
 John 147-150
 Joseph 149 150
 Judith 149 150
 Lydia 149
 Maribel 147 148
 Mary 147 148
 Nathaniel 148 149
 Peter 147-149
 Sarah 147 149 150 181
 CHIN John 99
 CROATE Mary 83 158
 Sarah 31
 Thomas 131 138
 CHURCH Mary 174
 John 174
 CLARLIN Caleb 31
 CLAPP Earl 105
 CLARK Rachel 158
 CLAY Sarah 167
 CLIFFORD John 17
 CLINTON James 32 33
 Laurence 130
 Sarah 32
 CLOPTON Francis 71
 John 65 66
 William 68
 COATES Mary 12
 COFFIN Apphia 231
 Deborah 237
 Joseph 199
 Joshua 179 199 221 237
 Mary 230
 Tristram 181 220 224 244
 COFFLEY Agnes 237
 COGSWELL Adam 175
 Edward 83
 Hannah 83
 John 175
 Samuel 137
 Sarah 83
 William 31
 COKER Elizabeth 246
 COCKET John 67
 COLBY Sarah 245
 COLCORD Sarah B. 160
 COLE Margaret 112
 COLLINS Henry 8
 James 97
 John 97
 Mary 212 213
 COLLINSON John 213
 COLMAN Anne 71
 Benjamin 107
 John 64
 Thomas 71
 CONLEY Abraham 21
 CONVILLE Catherine 170
 COOK Aaron 16
 Frances 216
 Lydia 104
 Mary 7
 Richard 71
 COOLEY Mary 113
 COOPER Augustine 4
 Austen 45
 William 237
 COPPINGER W. A. 61
 COREY Giles 98
 COTES Martha 158
 COTTLE Sarah 196
 COTTON Ann 218
 John 22
 Rev. Mr. 27
 Sarah 22
 William 218
 COWES Giles 97 112
 COWLEY Richard 204
 Ruth 203 204
 CRAM Alice 45
 Anne 46
 Benjamin 46 47
 Christian 45
 Elizabeth 45 46
 Esther 46
 Frances 45
 Jane 45 46
 John 45 47
 Joseph 47
 Lydia 45 47
 Mary 20 45 47
 Nicholas 45
 Richard 45
 Samuel 45 46
 Sylvester 46
 Thamar 46
 Thomas 45-47
 William 45
 CRANE Elizabeth 64
 Frances 74 75
 Henry 71
 Margery 64
 Robert 64 65 71
 Sir Robert 73 74
 Susan 74
 CRANFIELD Joan 203
 William 203
 CRESSEY Michael 103
 CROMWELL Augustine 47
 CROSS Abiel 133 134
 Anna 129 131 135 139
 Benjamin 135
 Elizabeth 131 134 135 138
 149
 Esther 133 134
 Francis 135
 James 133 134
 John 129 133-135 138 139
 Katherine 134
 Lucy 133 134
 Martha 129-131 133-135
 Mary 129 131 135
 Moses 138
 Nathaniel 33 135 139
 Phebe 135
 Ralph 132-134
 Robert 129-134 136 138
 143 144
 Samuel 138
 Sarah 104 133-135 138 139
 Stephen 194 129 131-134
 136 138 139 144 149
 Thomas 133 134
 CROWNSHIELD Richard
 107
 CUES Mary 135
 CUMMINGS Isaac 52
 CURRIER John J. 221
 Mchitable 246
 Nathan 246
 Richard 228
 CURTIS Reuben 169
 D
 DALTON Ruth 123
 Timothy 123
 DANE John 22 95 103
 Mary 83
 Nathaniel 32
 DANIEL Thomas 54
 DAVIDSON Daniel 175
 DAVIS Benjamin 175
 Elizabeth 166 175
 Jenkin 20
 Joseph 107
 Mary 93
 Nathaniel 246
 Phebe 169
 Sarah 175 246
 Thomas 97 196
 DAVIDSON Margaret 174
 DAVEY Lyoile 213
 DAY Abner 38
 Abigail 32
 Job 37
 Mary 105
 DEACON John 8
 DEBDON Agnes 213
 DEBLANCHET Thomas 136

- DENIS Charlotte 245
 DENISON Daniel 26
 John 124
 DENNIS John 105
 Martha 164
 Thomas 97 137
 DERBY John 169
 Lucretia 101 102
 Roger 100 101
 DEVEREUX Peter 117-118
 DICER 99
 DIGBY John 3
 Robert 4
 DILL Peter 24
 DILLINGHAM Sarah 77
 DODGE Elizabeth 32 104
 Isaac 105
 Joanna 175
 Josiah 161
 Martha 175
 Phebe 32
 Richard 175
 Samuel 26
 Sarah 105
 Susanna 98
 DOLE Henry 198
 John 218
 Patricia 198
 Richard 148 216 221
 DOUGHTY Samuel 75
 DOW Daniel 112
 Jeremiah 112 125
 Margaret 36 112
 Mary 112
 Thomas 112 125
 DOWELL Isabel 213
 DOWNE Henry 107
 DOWNER Joseph 236 237
 Mary 236
 DOWNING Emanuel 203
 Susan 203
 DOWSETT Gabriel 194
 Joan 194
 Mercy 194
 Thomas 194
 Thomasine 194
 DRAKE Samuel G. 101
 DRESSER Sarah 159
 DRISCOLL Derby 39
 DRURY Theophilus 45
 DUMMER Elizabeth 197
 DUPUY Mons. 245
 DURGES Rebecca 24
 DURGYE Thomas 23 26
 DURKEE Martha 131
 William 129-131
 DUSTIN Hannah 150
 DUTCH Abigail 102 103 106
 107
 Alice 95
 Barbara 98
 Benjamin 96 97 100 103-
 105 123 125 137-139
 Betty 107
 Caleb 97
 Daniel 105
 Dorothy 102 103
 Ebenezer 101 105
 Edward 87
 Elizabeth 100 101 103 104
 107 124
 Esther 96
 Eunice 105
 George 102 103 106 107
 133
 Grace 92-96
 Hannah 97 100 101 104
 105 107
 Harris 107
 Hezekiah 94 96 99
 Jane 102 103
 John 87 97 99 100 102
 103 124 125
 Lucy 105
 Margaret 89 95
 Martha 99 102-104
 Mary 95-97 99 101-103 106
 107
 Mehitable 106
 Nathaniel 38 100 104 125
 Osmund 87-95 104-106
 Robert 87 88 92 94-97 100
 101 105 113
 Samuel 94 96-103 106
 107
 Sarah 34 104 105 107
 Stephen 104 105
 Susan 124
 Susanna 95 98 100 105
 Thomas 101
 William 87 88 95
 DYER John 214
 Margaret 214

 E
 EASTMAN Joseph 15 16
 Mary 15
 Peter 15
 EATON Phebe 105
 ELIOT John 147
 Skipper 39
 ELKINS Samuel 25
 ELLES Constant 97
 ELLERY William 94
 ELLISON Elizabeth 104
 ELWELL Elias 176
 Esther 94 95
 Joseph 96
 Joshua 176
 Mary 96
 Samuel 94 96
 EMERSON Benjamin 244
 John 150
 Mary 188
 Mercy 33
 EMERY Alice 189
 Anne 185 189
 Anthony 185
 Ebenezer 189
 Eleanor 180 189
 Ellen 185
 George 223
 Hugh 185
 John 179 180 185-189
 Jonathan 188 189
 Margery 185
 Mary 188
 Sarah 181
 Stephen 231
 Thomas 185 235
 ENSWORTH Lydia 158
 EPES Daniel 56
 EVANS Elizabeth 160
 EVELETH Betsy 164
 EVERARD John 75
 Judith 75
 Thomas 75
 EVERETT Aaron 167
 EWEN L'Estrange 210

 F
 FARLEY Mesback 156
 Michael 156
 FARNHAM George F. 4
 FARNSWORTH Mehitable 165
 FAVOUR Willoughby 39
 FAY Jonas 162
 FELLOWS Ephraim 131
 Hannah 125
 Jonathan 28 190
 FIELD Jane B. 170
 FIGG John 223
 FILLMORE John 26
 FITCH James 156
 FITTS Abraham 57 138
 Eunice 165
 James 106
 FLAGG Ernest 75
 FOGG Ezekiel 229
 FORDHAM Andrew 117
 FORGERSON Arthur 36
 FOSDICK Elizabeth 167
 FOSTER Abigail 163
 Abraham 133
 Elizabeth 169
 George 169
 Jacob 97 134
 James 34 133-135
 Mary 125 164
 Nathan 159 164 169
 FOWLER John 56
 Joseph 106 113 129
 Mary 106
 Philip 57
 Sarah 200
 FOY Dorothy 161
 FREEMAN Lucy 153
 Thomas 194
 FRENCH Joel 164
 John 92
 FULLER John 129 143
 Mary 32

 G
 GAGE Elizabeth 38
 Joan 208
 GALE Thomas 68
 GAMAGE John 125
 GARDNER Ebenezer 98
 GATES Isaac 166
 GEORGE Stephen 169
 GERRISH Abigail 218
 Benjamin 218
 Elizabeth 218
 Johan 222
 John 218
 Joseph 218
 Judith 218
 Mary 218
 Moses 218 229
 William 217 218 221-224
 GIDDINGS Abigail 101
 Daniel 135
 George 51
 Mary 135
 Ruth 135
 William 33
 GILDERSLEEVE Richard 76
 GILMAN Abigail 34
 Elizabeth 160
 GIMPSON John 228
 GLOVER Priscilla 77
 Stephen 93
 GOAD Elizabeth 204
 GOLDING Peter 14
 GOODALE Elizabeth 217 221
 John 217
 Susan 222
 Thankful 165
 GOODHUE Abigail 175
 Caroline 41
 John 40
 Joseph 175
 Thankful 164
 William 53 83 175

- GOODWIN John 213
 Martha 200
 Nancy 40
 Rebecca 40
 GORE Samuel 157
 GOTT Charles 113
 Mary 113
 GOULD John 154
 Thomas 216
 GOWEN *als* SMITH William 21
 GOYT John 96
 GRANTHAM Alice 187
 Andrew 187
 GRAVES Elizabeth 138
 John 134
 Martha 134
 Mary 134
 Moses 161
 Samuel 134
 GREENLAND Henry 187 188
 GREENLEAF Edmund 222
 Parker 231
 Stephen 218
 GREENOUGH Abigail 150
 Benjamin 105
 Sarah 150
 GREY Lord John 212
 GRIFFITH Mary E. 41
 GROVES John 176
 GUERNSEY James 16
 GULMAR James 189
 GUNNISON Isaac 40
 GERDON John 76
 Robert 68
 Rose 69
 GWYNE Thomas 71
- H
- HADLEY John 176
 HAINES Jane 153
 HALE Anne 198
 Apphia 196
 Benjamin 40 197 198
 Dionis 198
 Dorothy 193
 Elizabeth 193
 Henry 197 198
 Hepsibah 167 199
 Jacob 199
 Joan 52 193
 John 193 196-200 220 228
 Joseph 175 197
 Judith 197
 Margaret 198
 Mary 193 198 199
 Moses 197 199
 Rebecca 198 200
 Richard 198 199 246
 Robert 52
 Robert S. 199
 Ruth 198
 Samuel 196-200 246
 Sarah 198 200
 Stephen 36 198 200
 Thomas 193-197 203 204 237
 Thomasine 194 196
 HALFIELD Rachel 130
 HALL Charles 106
 Richard 73
 Thomas 88 89
 HALLETT Richard 91
 HANCOCK Thomas 35
 HANSON Mary A. 41
 HANSUME Martin 45
 HARDING William 213
 HARE Sir Ralph 74
- HARMON John 37
 Johnson 231
 Mary 231
 HARRADEN Edward 96
 HARRIS Deborah 161
 Elizabeth 107
 John 36 137
 Susanna 36
 HART Joseph 139
 Stephen 139
 Thomas 125
 HASEY Joseph 83
 Nathan 83
 William 55 83
 HASKELL Gideon 157
 Jemima 30 31
 Lucy 165
 Mark 31 105
 Martha 165
 Roger 158
 Samuel 156
 Sarah 104
 William 93
 Zipporah 157
 HASTINGS Lady Katherine 209
 HAWKS John 12
 HAYDEN Ruth 168
 HAZELTINE Anna 113
 Lucy 134
 Mercy 113
 Richard 134
 Sarah 231
 HAYWELL Edward 89
 Margaret 88 89
 Stephen 88 89
 Thomas 88 89
 HEALEY Nathaniel 28
 HENDLEY Joseph 99
 HERRBERT Elizabeth 163
 HERRICK Ephraim 131
 Joseph 169
 Mary 131
 Stephen 131
 HERRING Experience 169
 HERSEY F. W. C. 147
 Judith 55
 William 55
 HIDDEN Mary 199
 HIDES Samuel 216
 HIGGINS Abial 163
 HILL Elizabeth 158
 Joan 235
 John 213
 HILLER Joseph 55
 HILLIARD Elizabeth 28
 HOAG Ebenezer 188
 John 189
 HOBBS Mary 160
 HOBSON Sara 5
 HODGKINS Anne 135
 Grace 94
 John 159
 Joseph 159
 Thomas 94 95 133 135
 William 96
 HODGSON Israel 21
 HOLLINGSWORTH 99
 HOLMAN Mary L. 117 189 213
 HOLT Nicholas 186
 HOLYOKE Edward 7
 HOOD Elizabeth 20
 John 8 19 20
 Mary 161
 HOOKER William 91
 HOPKINS Edward 13
 HOPKINSON Caleb 167
- HOVEY Ebenezer 105
 Hannah 163
 John 155
 HOWARD Joseph J. 61
 Nathaniel 159 165
 Samuel 133
 HOWLETT Samuel 161
 Sarah 160
 HUBBALL John 214
 HUBBARD John 22 83
 Mary 83
 Richard 22 53
 William 81 101
 HUET Ephraim 7 12
 HUNT Elizabeth 124
 Jane 19
 Sarah 123
 HUNTINGTON William 180
 HUTCHINSON Ann 5
 Mary 196
 HUTTON Richard 98
- I
- ILSLEY Joseph 239
 Isaac 229
 Joseph 230
 Sarah 196
 William 148 179
 INGALLS Francis 8 9
 INGERSOLL Ann 236
 Bathsua 237
 Jonathan 104
 ISAAC Edward 70
 Mary 70 71 75
 ISHAM 203
- J
- JACKSON Elizabeth 139
 Joseph 139
 Sarah 139
 JACOB Abigail 56
 Ann 54
 Jane 55
 John 52 54 55
 Joseph 53-57
 Judith 53-55
 Lydia 53 54 56
 Martha 52-56
 Mary 29 54-56
 Mercy 56
 Nathaniel 51 52 54-56
 Richard 51-55 77
 Samuel 53 57
 Sarah 56 81
 Susanna 57
 Thomas 52-57 83
 JACQUES Abigail 231
 Anna 228
 Anne 229-231
 Benjamin 230 231
 Daniel 228 229 231
 Eleanor 230
 Elphalet 230
 Elizabeth 228 230 231 237
 Enoch 88
 Florence 167 230
 Hannah 230 231
 Henry 227-230 236 237 239 240 243
 John 229-231
 Jonathan 229
 Love 230
 Mary 229-231
 Moses 231
 Parker 233
 Rebecca 229
 Richard 228-231
 Ruth 228 231

- Samuel 230 231
 Sarah 38 197 229-231
 Stephen 228 230
 Susanna 231
 Thankful 230
 JEFFORDS Mary 31
 JEFFREY Arthur 224
 Elizabeth M. 170
 JEFFS John 161
 JERMYN Agnes 69
 Ambrose 70
 Francis 70
 Robert 70
 Thomas 69 70
 JEWELL William 99
 JEWETT Isaac A. 61
 Katherine 134
 Nehemiah 100 124 135
 Ruth A. 41
 JOCELYN John 194
 JOHNS Elizabeth 153
 JOHNSON Israel 163
 Mary 158
 Sarah 134
 JONES Fanny 106
 Robert 228
 JORDAN Ann 144
 Abba 129
 Jane 144
 Stephen 143
 Susanna 143 144
 K
 KELLOGG Joseph 16
 KELLY Abiel 240
 David 181
 John 239 240
 Jonathan 239
 Richard 240
 Sarah 197 239 240
 KENDRICK John 136 137 148
 149
 Sarah 149
 KENICUM Ruth 24
 KENT Richard 36 147
 Sarah 40
 Stephen 167 195
 KETTEL Sarah 166
 KEYNES John M. 3
 KEYSER Sarah 244
 KILHAM David 154
 KIMBALL Abigail 111 118
 Benjamin 112 113
 Caleb 112 113 156
 Elizabeth 111 113 118
 Henry 52 111 112 118
 Jemima 246
 John 111-113 159
 Martha 111 113
 Mary 96 111-113
 Nathaniel 135
 Phebe 158
 Richard 111-113 118 119
 Sarah 112 113 156
 Thomas 111-113 135
 Ursula 117 118
 KING Elizabeth 105
 KINGSBURY Henry 153
 KINSMAN Joseph 100
 Mary 32
 Susanna 125
 Thomas 32 33
 KIRBY Camdena 204
 Elizabeth 204
 Francis 193 194 203 204
 Godsgift 204
 Joan 193 203 204
 John 203 204
 Joshua 203 204
 Martha 204
 Phebe 204
 Richard 203 204
 Ruth 204
 Susan 204
 Welcome 204
 William 204
 KNIGHT Agnes 238
 Andrew 235
 Anna 227
 Anne 238 240
 Bathsua 239
 Benjamin 231 237
 Daniel 198
 Edmund 235
 Elizabeth 230 237 240
 Hannah 237
 Isaac 237
 Jacob 167
 John 186 195 229 235-238
 Joseph 236 237
 Mary 237
 Rebecca 240
 Richard 186 221 231 235-
 238 240
 Sarah 237 240
 Ursula 235
 William 235 240
 KNIGHTLEY Edmund 212
 KNOWLTON Benjamin 98
 John 98
 Louisa 165
 Nathaniel 103 125
 Thomas 104
 L
 LAKEMAN Elizabeth 107
 John 107
 LAMB John 24 26
 Mary 175
 LAMBERT Mary 81
 LANE Esther 169
 LANGTON 204
 LANGTRE Thomas 212
 LARABEE Dorothy 157
 LASSER Sarah 160
 LAWRENCE Joseph 28
 Mary 138
 LAWES Mary 148
 Priscilla 148
 Rebecca 148
 William 148
 LEAVER Thomas 245
 LECHFORD Thomas 76 90 91
 LER John 132 137
 LEGROS Hepsibah 99
 John 99
 LEIGH Joseph 83
 LEIGHTON John 133
 LE NEVE William 214
 LEONARD Henry 154
 John 15 170
 LEVEREDGE Agnes 213
 Alice 213
 Apolyn 212 213
 Edmund 212 213
 Frances 213
 Richard 212
 Roger 213
 LEWIS Ebed 161
 Edmund 8
 LIAPCHIK Matthew C. 169
 LIGHTFOOT Francis 8
 LIGHTON John 155
 LION Elizabeth 153
 LITTLE George 149
 Moses 231
 Tristram 230
 LITTLEFIELD Deliverance 21
 Francis 21 22
 James 22
 LOCKWOOD Edmund 120
 LONG Antipas 175
 LONG Robert 222 240
 LORD Aaron 159
 Daniel 165
 Elizabeth 135
 Lucy 105
 Nathan 21
 LORING Daniel 107
 Elizabeth 41
 LOSSE Agnes 117
 LOUGE Shuah 160
 LOVELL Agnes 211
 Alexander 105 155
 Elizabeth 101
 Hannah 101
 James 223
 Thomas 73 101 149 211
 LOVERELL Esther 21
 John 21
 LOVEWELL John 223
 Low Abigail 175
 Alice 176
 Anna 175
 David 175
 Deborah 175
 Dorcas 176
 Elizabeth 175 176
 Hannah 176
 Joanna 175
 John 173-176
 Jonathan 174 175
 Joseph 176
 Lucy 32
 Margaret 173-176
 Martha 174-176
 Nathaniel 175
 Samuel 174 175
 Sarah 154 174-176
 Susanna 173
 Symonds 175
 Thomas 29 137 138 154
 173-175
 Thorndike 175 176
 LOWATER Sarah 164
 LOWIE, Lolle, Lole
 Andrew 214
 Anne 217 218
 Benjamin 220-224
 D. R. 207
 Edmund 213
 Elizabeth 221-224
 Francis 214
 George 209
 Gregory 209
 Henry 209
 James 214 219 221-223
 Joan 214
 Joanna 217
 John 208-214 216 217
 221-224
 Joseph 219 221 222 224
 Margaret 210 214 220
 Martha 214
 Mary 212 214 221-223
 Percival 207-209 215-217
 220 221
 Peter 221 223
 Prudence 214
 Ralph 214
 Rebecca 196 220
 Richard 207 208 212-217
 219-222 224
 Roger 208 210 212 214

- Samuel 220
 Thomas 208-210 220 224
 Valentine 209
 Williams 207-210 214
 LUCE Sir Richard 236
 LUMBERT Ann 18
 Jonathan 19
 Rachel 17
 LUNT Abel 40
 George 34 40

 M
 MUCHAM Ruth 204
 MANNING Richard 33
 Sarah 32
 Thomas 29
 MARCH Hugh 24 132 239
 MARSHALL Anna 131
 Edmund 92
 Thomas 131
 MARTIN Abigail 156
 Roger 66
 Samuel 246
 Sarah 23
 MASON Mary 55
 Samuel 55
 Thomas 45 46
 MAYHEW Abiah 19
 Bathsheba 19
 Martha 99
 Sarah 19
 McCLENAGHAN Barbara 63
 McCRILLIS James 35
 MEACHAM Alice 94 95
 Jeremiah 95
 MEAGHERS John 97 99
 MELDON Susanna 169
 MERRICK Susanna 229
 MERRILL Abel 144
 Abraham 188
 Nathaniel 143
 Susanna 143
 METCALFE Walter C. 71
 MICHILL Ezekiel 243
 Mehitable 105
 MILLER John 180
 MILLET Rev. Mr. 92
 Thomas 96
 MILTON Edward 18
 MILWARD Ann 219
 Elizabeth 219
 Rebecca 219
 Thomas 99 91 217 218 222
 MINER Thomas 158
 MIRICK Lydia 150
 MITCHELL David 99
 Robert 134 135
 Sarah 161
 MOONY Ezra 167
 Joshua 54
 Lady (Deborah) 10 11
 Mary 197
 Oliver 36
 Thomas 197
 MOORS Ruth 230
 MOORE Martha 74
 Matthew 236
 Richard 97-99
 Samuel 34 229
 Susanna 97
 Thomas 74
 MORGAN Andrew 161
 Samuel 157
 MORTARTY George A. 193
 MORSE Anthony 229 239 240
 Elizabeth 239
 Joseph 239
 MOULTON Caleb 32
 Hannah 17
 Sarah 244
 MOUNTNEY Mary 66
 MUNDY Ursula 235
 MUSKETT J. J. 61
 MUSSEY Robert 51
 MUZZEY Joseph 195 236

 N
 NAPPER John 89
 NASH John 204
 Mary 204
 Timothy 16
 NEEDHAM Ezekiel 132
 NEFF William 236
 NELSON Elizabeth 130 131
 Philip 224
 William 131
 NEWMAN Christian 45
 David 159
 George 159
 Hannah 157
 John 45 95
 Rose 125
 Sarah 125
 NEWTON Mary 203
 NICHOLAS Mary 38
 NICHOLS John 6
 NICHOLSON Elizabeth 163
 NORTHEND Mehitable 106
 NORTON Freegrace 22
 NOWELL Moses 39
 NOYES Cutting 149 237
 Hannah 149
 James 237
 Jane 168
 Judith 231
 Mary 230 231
 Nicholas 216 220 221 237
 240
 Peter 216
 Pike 168
 Rebecca 237
 Sybil 167
 Thomas 229 237
 Timothy 237

 O
 OGARD Anne 64
 OLIVER Christopher 217
 Johan 217
 John 217
 Mary 77 218
 OLMSTEAD Israel 162
 ORDWAY James 188 189
 OSBORNE Hannah 165
 Sally 164
 OVERTON Thomas 45

 P
 PAGE Christopher 28 99
 Meribah 28
 Nicholas 155
 PAINE Hannah 77
 John 54
 PAINTER John 12
 Sarah 12
 PALMER Christopher 127 123
 Huldah 40
 Joseph 40 41
 William 123
 W. W. 42
 PARKER Parks Ezekiel 157
 158
 Zebulon 157
 PARKER Alice 99
 PARSONS Alice Abigail 15
 Benjamin 15
 PARTRIDGE Joanna 176
 Samuel 14 16
 PATCH Thomas 119 120
 PATTEN Elizabeth 41
 Thomas 41
 PEABODY Joel F. 169
 PEARSE Samuel 245
 PEARSON Jane 163
 Lydia 230
 PECKER Mary 245
 PECKERAM John 123
 PEIRCE Daniel 218 219
 PEARSON John 193
 PENGRY Aaron 112
 John 125
 Mehitable 83
 Moses 112
 PEPPERELL Sir William 37
 PEPYS Richard 76
 PERCEVAL Edmund 215
 PERKE Margaret 214
 PERKINS Abraham 22
 Brainsby 29
 Ebenezer 158
 Eunice 38
 Hannah 29
 Jacob 17 125
 John 136
 Judith 83
 Katherine 103
 Matthew 156
 Oliver 157
 PERLEY Allen 123
 Jacob 155
 Nathaniel 105
 Thomas 39
 PERPOINT Thomas 68
 PETTINGILL Elizabeth 200
 Joanna 168
 Moses 199
 Samuel 168
 PHELPS Elizabeth 160
 PHILLIPS Samuel 77
 PHILMORE Ebenezer 24
 John 24
 PICKERING Joshua 229
 Rebecca 229
 PIERCE Daniel 220
 Joshua 165
 Mary 163 230
 William 199
 PIKE John 24 195 230 237
 Joseph 188
 Lydia 231
 Robert 147 180 186
 PINDER Moses 164
 Simod 106
 PITMAN Nathaniel 92
 PLUMMER Ephraim 228 230
 Joseph 148 149
 Joshua 164
 Mary 149
 Ruth 229
 POLAND Samuel 32
 Sarah 31
 POOR Jonathan 198
 Mary 144
 Rachel 167 181
 Rebecca 198
 Samuel 181
 Sarah 181
 PORTER Elizabeth W. 41
 POTTER Anthony 29 154
 Edmund 29
 Robert 133

- POUND Thomas 137
 POWERS Martha 162
 PRATT Ann 90
 Benjamin 169
 Bennett 90
 Grace 90
 John 90
 PRESTON Jacob 73 74
 PRIMROSE Ann 90
 PRINCE Thomas 92
 PUDRATOR Anne 99
 PULCIPHER Sarah 163
 PUTNAM Elizabeth 181
 Priscilla 181
 PYCROFT Ursula 7
 PYNCHION John 14

 R
 RAITHEY Thomas 45
 RAMZAY Claude de 245
 RANDALL Elizabeth 243
 Priscilla 166
 William 161
 RANSOME John 117
 RASLE Sebastien 231
 RATHBONE Charity 157
 RAWSON Edward 238
 RAYNER William 112
 RAYNES Anna 36
 REPYNGTON Robert 208
 RETFORD Ralph 3
 RICHARDS John 150
 RICHARDSON William 12
 RIGGS Jonathan 31
 RING Daniel 174
 Isaac 26 100
 Jeremiah 169
 Sarah 196
 RIX James 158
 ROBERTS Axwell 176
 Patrince 96
 ROBINSON John 25
 Mary 244
 Matthew 203
 Robert 244
 ROCKE William 67
 ROCKWOOD Alice 65
 Firman 68
 Kate H. 42
 ROGERS Ezekiel 119
 John 29
 Joseph 224
 Margaret 120
 Martha 120
 Mary 104
 Nathaniel 32 173
 Ruth 181
 Samuel 77
 William 120
 ROLFE Benjamin 220
 John 187
 Mary 187 243
 ROOTEN Richard 8 9
 ROPER Elizabeth 99 124
 John 100 123-125
 Mary 124
 Nathaniel 124 125
 Sarah 124
 Susan 123
 Walter 123 124
 ROUND Horace 211
 ROW Hugh 97
 ROWELL Valentine 180
 ROWLINSON Thomas 119
 RUCH Hannah 218
 RUSS Daniel 164
 RUSSELL John 13 15
 RUST Nathaniel 56 175

 RYCHES Henry 67
 RYECE Mary 75
 Robert 72-76
 RYNGEFELD William 63
 RYSING Richard 63

 S
 SADLER Abiel 147 148
 John 92 148
 Martha 147
 Richard 10
 SAFFORD Abigail 154 164-167
 169 170
 Abraham 159 163 164
 Amy 158
 Anna 160 162
 Anne 38 158 168
 Benjamin 160 167 169
 Betsey 169
 Challis 162
 Daniel 159 163 164 169
 David 158
 Deborah 161
 Desire 157 169
 Dorothy 157
 Dudley 160
 Ebenezer 163-165
 Edward 165
 Eleanor 155 162 165
 Elizabeth 153-156 158 159
 161 162 164 165 169
 Emma 160 161
 Enoch 166-168
 Ephraim 160 161
 Esther 158
 Eunice 168
 Gideon 157 158
 Hannah 156-161 163-165
 168
 Henry S. 165
 Isaac 164
 Israel P. 161
 James 39 40 159 164 167
 168
 James D. 170
 Jeremiah 161
 Jesse 162
 Joel 163
 John 154-161 164-166 168-
 170 176
 Jonas 162
 Jonathan 158 162
 Joseph 153-162
 Joshua 160 161 165
 Jude 160 161
 Judith 161 169
 Lucinda 162
 Lucretin 158
 Lucy 158 165 166
 Lydia 164 169
 Margaret 155 158
 Mark 166
 Martha 159
 Martha 162 165 166
 Mary 154 156 158 161-
 164 166 168
 Mary B. 169
 Mehitable 155 166
 Mercy 155 158 159 163
 Moses 160 161 168
 Nathan 159 165 166 169
 Nathaniel 160 164
 Nathaniel F. 169
 Noah 163
 Patty 164
 Peggy 158
 Philip 162 163
 Priscilla 158

 Rachel 160 161
 Rebecca 155 163 164 169
 Richard 168
 Robert 162
 Ruth 166
 Sally 163 164 167 169
 Samuel 156 158 160
 Sarah 154-156 158-161 164
 169 174
 Simcon 160 161 166 169
 Stephen 159 166-169
 Susan 160 169
 Susanna 161 165
 Thankful 158 165
 Theodore 164
 Thomas 150 158-156 158-
 161 164 166 167
 Titus 159
 Ward 166
 William 160 162 163 165
 166 169 170
 SALTONSTALL Richard 77
 137 153
 SANBORN Mehitable 27
 SANDERS John 221
 SANFORD Thomas 153
 SARGOTE John 6
 SARGENT Epes 104
 Martha 246
 Mary 161
 SAUNDERS William 169
 SAVORY Moses 105
 SAWYER Sarah 181
 SAYERS Robert 123
 SAYWARD Robert 123
 SCOLLAY Sarah 166
 SCOTT Abigail 12 118 119
 Anne 117
 Benjamin 120
 Dinay 117
 Edmund 117
 Elizabeth 119
 George 117
 Hannah 119 120
 Henry 117
 Joan 117
 John 118
 Margaret 120
 Martha 111 117 118
 Mary 119 120
 Nicholas 117
 Roger 117 118
 Rose 117
 Sarah 118-120 158 164
 Susan 118
 Thomas 117-120
 Ursula 111 118
 William 12
 SCULLARD Samuel 243
 SEAMAN Lionel 213
 SEAVEY Stephen 37
 Susanna 37
 SEVERANCE John 112 113
 SEWARD William 161
 SEXTON Agnes 70
 Allen 69
 Alice 70
 Bridget 70
 Margaret 70
 Marion 69
 Mary 70
 Robert 68-70
 Rose 68 69 71
 Thomas 70
 SHATSWELL Eleanor 158
 Richard 150
 SHAW Benjamin 9
 Elizabeth 28

- Joseph 17 21 26 27
 Meribah 28
 Roger 8 9 16 17 20 21 26
 Susanna 8 9 17
 SHEAFE Jacob 107
 SHERBURNE Margaret 28
 SHORT Anthony 148
 Henry 229
 SILVER Adelaide 245
 Elizabeth 244 246
 Eunice 246
 Hannah 244
 John 243-246
 Katherine 243
 Martha 244 246
 Mary 199 244-246
 Mehitable 246
 Mercy 246
 Ruth 246
 Samuel 243 245 246
 Sarah 244-246
 Thomas 243-245
 Timothy 246
 SKEFFINGTON 3
 SKIFFE Bathsheba 19
 Sarah 19
 SKINNER William 246
 SLADE Benjamin 34
 SMITH Aaron 32
 Elizabeth 31
 Henry 74 76
 Jane 218
 John 35 64 195
 Martha 147 214
 Mary 113
 Nathaniel 149
 Rachel 32
 Richard 148 149 156
 Sally 169
 Thomas 214
 Zebulon 33
 SNELLING William 120
 SOMERBY Abiel 239 240
 Anthony 216 217 220
 Henry 195
 Rebecca 239
 Sarah 196
 SPARKS Elizabeth 124
 John 124
 Rose 124
 Sarah 124
 Susan 124
 SPARROW Joan 153
 SPENCER Garret 20
 John 238
 SPICER Esther 12
 Samuel 12
 SPILLER Jeremiah 32
 SPOFFORD John 119
 SPRANGLER Edward 194
 SPRING Margaret 63 66
 Marian 70
 Thomas 62 63 66 69
 SPRINGER Mary 170
 STACY Margaret 160
 Simon 26 100
 STANFORD John 107
 Lucy 105
 STEARNS E. S. 223
 STEPHENS Walter 217
 STETSON Lydia 166
 STEVENS Andrew 158
 James 95
 STIMPSON John 107
 STONE Daniel 120
 William 133
 STORY Agnes 173
 STRODE William 67
 STRUTT Elizabeth 118
 STUBBS Edward 67
 STUDLEY Benjamin 104 105
 SUMNER Mary B. 41
 SWASEY Abigail 165
 SWAYNE Richard 46
 SWETT Edmund 39
 Judith 198
 Sarah 198
 SYLVESTER Elizabeth 223
 SYMONDS David 103
 Harlackenden 175
 Jane 108
 Samuel 175
 Susanna 56
- T
- TAILOR Elizabeth 153
 TAPPAN Abraham 222
 Peter 223
 Susan 222
 TAYLOR Thankful 230
 TEISDALE Mary 45
 TERRY Rebecca 12
 THOMAS Isaiah 34
 THOMPSON Mary 175
 Maurice 91
 Miles 21
 THORNE Bernard 33
 Martha 81
 THORNDIKE Sarah 175
 THORPE Thomas 219
 THURLOW Thomas 197
 THURTON Thomas 27
 TIBBETS Charles S. 237
 TILLOTSON John 195
 TILTON Abigail 12 26 28 33
 Abraham 9 19-25 28-31
 36-38 47 56
 Agnes 7
 Alexander 3
 Alice 7
 Amy 7
 Andrew 37 38
 Anna 32 39 40 167
 Anne 37 38
 Benjamin 26 36-38 40
 Beriah 19
 Charles 37 38
 Charles T. 41
 Christopher 6
 Daniel 9 26-28 30 31 33-
 38 40 104
 David 28 32
 Deliverance 23
 Ebenezer 26
 Elizabeth 7 16 36 40 41
 200
 Esther 12
 Frances E. 42
 Francis 37
 Frederick A. 41
 George H. 41
 Hannah 17 18 28 32 36
 Harriet A. 40
 Henry 5
 Hepsibah 34 168
 Hensibah S. 39
 Hubbard W. 42
 Isaac 23 32 36
 Israel 32
 Jacob 26 30 31 33 34 38
 Jemima 31 33 34 37
 Jethro 23
 Job 36
 John 3 5-7 9 10-12 17-19
 31 34 37 38 41
 John E. 42
 John G. 40 41
 Joseph 26 28 31 34
 Joseph B. 41
 Josiah 17-19 32
 Lucy 37
 Margaret 38
 Margaret A. R. 41
 Margery 6
 Maria A. 41
 Martha A. 42
 Mary 11 12 16 18 19 21 26
 28 30 31 33 34 36 38 41
 Mary E. 42
 Mary P. 41
 Mehitable 28
 Mercy 26 28
 Micah 19
 Molly 38
 Nathaniel 34 38-40 168
 Patience 36
 Peggy 38
 Peter 7 9 11-16 20
 Phoebe 40
 Priscilla 41
 Rachel 19 33
 Rebecca 26
 Richard 5-7
 Robert 6 7
 Salathiel 19
 Samuel 9 16-18 20 23 24
 26-28 31 34 37
 Sarah 12 26 31-38
 Sarah A. 40
 Sarah W. 38
 Stephen 36 38 39-41
 Stephen W. 42
 Susanna 8 18 34 37
 Thomas 5-7 12 19
 Warren 41
 William 3-9 17-19 21 34
 William S. 41
 TITCOMB William 147 186
 TOB Margaret 173
 TOMLINS Edward 8
 TORREY F. C. 233
 Josiah 18
 Naomi 223
 Samuel 223
 Sarah 18
 William 223
 TOUSEY Thomas 97
 TOWER Nathaniel 38
 TOWLE Elizabeth 160
 TRACY Benjamin 157
 Daniel 157
 Jedediah 158
 Margery 157
 Thomas 157
 TRAVERS Bridget 187
 Henry 187
 TREDWELL Martha 132
 TROWBRIDGE Abigail 150
 TRUAMAN Anne 229
 John 229
 TUCK Robert 17
 TUREL Daniel 120
 TURFAT Elizabeth 204
 George 204
 TURNER Richard 76
 TYLER James 156
- U
- USHER Ellen 117
 USSELTON Francis 227

- V
 VAUDEN Nicholas 130
 VAURREUIL Marquis de 245
 VAUER John 216
 VICARY Judith 160
 VILLIERS Elizabeth 212
 VINCENT William 92
- W
 WAINWRIGHT Abigail 32
 Ann 32
 Christian 35
 Mary 244
 Simon 244
 WAITE Benjamin 138
 Elizabeth 138
 John 134
 Joazab 24 25
 Mary 24
 Thomas 24
 WAKE Emma 212
 Richard 211
 Roger 211 212
 Thomas 211
 WALDEGRAVE Edmund 68
 WALDO Cornelius 129
 WALDRON Ann 218
 Elizabeth 218
 WALKIN Alice 214
 WALLIS Dr. 193
 Nicholas 154
 Robert 153
 Sarah 26
 WARD Hannah 166
 Richard 204
 Sarah 22
 William 204
 WARDWELL Ethu 106
 Prudence 106
 WARHAM John 13
 WARNER Asa 104
 Lydia 162
 Ralph 12
 WARR Katherine 89
 Richard 88
 WARREN Betsey 169
 WATERS T. Franklin 31 102
 WATSON Warren 166
 WEARE Elizabeth 47
- WEBB Prudence 117
 WEBBER Edward 138
 WEBSTER John 186
 Mary 187
 Nathaniel 175
 WEED John 198
 Sarah 198
 WELCH Robert 71
 WELLING Margaret 63
 Robert 63
 WELLS Mary 38
 Nathaniel 29
 Thomas 29 130 131 174
 WEST Thomas 143 195
 Twyford 119
 WHALE Joseph 193 203
 WHATLOCK Joan 117
 Martha 117
 Robert 117
 Thomas 117
 WHEELER Daniel 162
 Nathan 155
 Nicholas 5
 Susanna 144
 WHEELWRIGHT John 46
 Mary 45
 Samuel 21
 WHIPPLE Elizabeth 157
 John 53 54 120 124
 Mary 54
 Timothy 158
 WHITCOMB Asa 166
 WHITE Audrey 45
 Esther 46
 Margaret 125
 William 143
 WHITMORE Benjamin 150
 John 164
 WHORF Eunice 160
 WIGGLESWORTH Martha 24
 Samuel 24
 WIRES Henry 214
 Nicholas 214
 Prudence 214
 WILDES Elijah 166
 WILKINS John 101
 WILLARD Josiah 55
 Martha 55
 Simon 55
- WILLETT Francis 243 244
 Martha 244
 WILLIAMS George F. 41 42
 John 213
 Mary 231 244
 WILSON Ezekiel 231
 WINCOLL John 71
 WING Hannah 17 18
 John 8
 Nathaniel 18
 WINSLADE Elizabeth 213
 Stephen 213
 WINSLEY Samuel 179
 WINSLOW Rebecca 162
 WINTER Mary 167
 WINTHROP John 51 194
 WISE John 107 174
 WISEMAN John 75
 Margaret 75
 WISWALL Sarah 150
 Thomas 150
 WITTUM Peter 21
 WOLCOTT John 236
 Wood John 39
 Obadiah 100
 Simon 133
 Thomas 100
 WOODBRIDGE Benjamin 230
 John 227
 Thomas 100
 WOODBURY Hannah 106 169
 WOODMAN Edward 180
 Mary 189
 Ruth 224
 WOODSOWE John 71
 WOODWELL Gideon 167 199
 John 26
 Margaret 25 26
 Matthew 25
 WRIGHT Azariah 163
 WYATT Mary 112
- Y
 YEOMANS Patience 158
 YORK John 169
 Mary 102
 Samuel 103
 YOUNGLOVE Samuel 143

